



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

No 1109

66-11-11

Acad

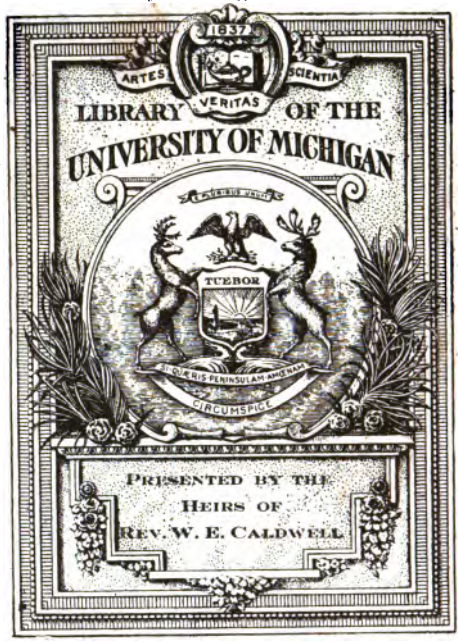
213

HARPER & BROTHERS' PUBLICATIONS.

### Saurin's Sermons.

Sermons of Rev. JAMES S. ROBINSON, Rev. HERBERT ROBINSON, Rev. HERBERT SUTCLIFFE. A New Edition and Corrected, by Rev. SAURIN, by Rev. J. P. K. HENSHAW \$4 00.

The plainness of Tillotson, the power of Horsley, and all, in a degree, mingled and corrected, by Rev. Dr. HENSHAW.



WM. E. CALDWELL.

BX

4827

5263

William E. Caldwell

Brimfield

Ms.

from Mrs Hannah Shedd.

August 11<sup>th</sup> 1847.

No 1109

7.6.11

WM. E. CALDWELL.



ELEVEN SELECT

SERMONS,

OF THE LATE

*Jacques*  
REV. (JAMES) SAURIN,

ON

VARIOUS IMPORTANT SUBJECTS.

---

CONCORD:

PRINTED BY GEORGE HOUGH,

FOR CHARLES PRINCE,

PORTSMOUTH, N. H.

1806.

11



---

---

## PREFACE.

---

---

THE Reverend *JAMES SAURIN*, the author of the ensuing discourses, was born at Nismes, a noted city of France, in 1677. His father was a lawyer, eminent for his learning and eloquence, of the protestant profession, who, upon the révocation of the edict of Nantz, retired to Geneva, where he ended his days. James removed with him, and was educated under some of the most learned and pious professors of the age.

Having completed his studies, in 1700 he visited England, where he resided nearly five years, and was remarkably acceptable as a preacher among his fellow exiles in the city of London.

“His style,” says the translator of his sermons, the Reverend *Robert Robinson*, “was pure, unaffected, and eloquent, sometimes plain, sometimes flowery; but never improper, as it was always adapted to the audience for whose sake he spoke.”

In

332303

31 Oct 19 E.H.W.

Received 5.9.36 gash

In 1705, a chaplainship to some of the nobility at the Hague was offered him, which he accepted. Here he continued till his death. He was constantly attended by a very crowded and brilliant assembly. He was heard with the utmost attention, and his ministerial labors were abundantly blessed by the great Head of the church.

He departed this life, for a better, on the 30th of December, 1730, at the age of 52, sincerely and universally regretted by the people of his charge, and by all, who had the happiness of an acquaintance with him.

Mr. Saurin's printed sermons are comprised in twelve volumes. From those, which have been translated, this selection has been carefully made by a gentleman of leisure, judgment, and taste.

To those, who have not had opportunity for perusing the sermons of this celebrated divine, the following recommendation may not be unacceptable.

*Approbation*

## PREFACE.

*Approbation of the Walloon Church at  
Dort, employed by the Synod of  
Utrecht, to examine the sermons of  
Mr. Saurin.*

“ WE have found nothing in all these sermons, contrary to the doctrine received among us. We have remarked every where, a manly eloquence ; a close reasoning ; an imagination, lively and proper, to establish the Truth of our holy religion ; and to explain, substantially and elegantly, the doctrines of morality. Accordingly, we believe they will effectually contribute to edify the Church, and to render more and more respectable the memory of this worthy servant of God ; whose death, the examination of his works, hath given us a fresh occasion to lament. We attest this to the venerable Synod at Utrecht. In the same sentiments, we send the present attestation to our dear brother, Mr. Dumont, pastor and professor at Rotterdam, whom the late  
Mr.

Mr. Saurin appointed, by his will, to take the charge of publishing such of his works as were fit for the press.

*Done at the Consistory of the Walloon Church, at Dort, May 20th, 1731, and signed by order of all, by*

H. G. Certon, *Pastor.*

S. Comperat, *Pastor.*

Adrian Bruets Jacobz, *Elder.*

John Backris, *Elder.*

John Van Breda, *Deacon.*

Simon Taay Van Campen, *Deac."*

---

CONTENTS.

SERMON I.

*The Omnipresence of God.*

PSALM CXXXIX. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12.

Page ..... 17

SERMON II.

*The Manner of praising God.*

PSALM XXXIII. 1.

Page ..... 47

SERMON III.

*The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ in the Church.*

ROMANS XIV. 7, 8.

Page ..... 69

SERMON IV.

*The Equality of Mankind.*

PROVERBS XXII. 2.

Page ..... 95

SERMON V.

*The Worth of the Soul.*

MATTHEW XVI. 26.

Page ..... 119

## CONTENTS.

## SERMON VI.

*The Birth of Jesus Christ.*

ISAIAH ix. 6, 7.

Page ..... 144

## SERMON VII.

*The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

PSALM cxviii. 15, 16.

Page ..... 170

## SERMON VIII.

*The Absurdity of Libertinism and  
Infidelity.*

PSALM xciv. 7, 8, 9, 10.

Page ..... 197

## SERMON IX.

*The Harmony of Religion and Civil  
Polity.*

PROVERBS xiv. 34.

Page ..... 222

## SERMON X.

*Christian Heroism.*

PROVERBS xvi. 32.

Page ..... 254

## SERMON XI.

*General Mistakes.*

ROMANS xii. 2.

Page ..... 276

---

# L I F E

OF

REV. JAMES SAURIN.

---

**M**R. SAURIN, the father of our author, was an eminent protestant lawyer at Nismes, who, after the repeal of the edict of Nantz, 1685, retired to Geneva. He was considered at Geneva as the oracle of the French language, the nature and beauty of which he thoroughly understood. He had four sons, whom he trained up in learning, and who were all so remarkably eloquent, that eloquence was said to be hereditary in the family. The Reverend Lewis Saurin, one of the sons, was afterwards pastor of a French church in London. Saurin, the father, died at Geneva. James, the author of the following sermons, was born at Nismes, in 1677, and went with his father into exile, to Geneva, where he profited very much in learning.

In the seventeenth year of his age, 1694, Saurin quitted his studies to go into the army, and made a campaign as a cadet in lord Galloway's company. The next year, 1695, his captain gave him a pair of colours in his regiment, which then served in Piedmont; but the year after, 1696, the duke of Savoy, under whom Saurin served, having made his peace with France, Saurin quitted the profession of arms, for which he was never designed, and returned to Geneva to study.

Geneva was, at that time, the residence of some of the best scholars in Europe, who were in the highest estimation in the republic of letters. Pictet, Lewis Tranchin, and Philip Mestrenat, were  
B professors

professors of divinity there; Alphonso Turretin was professor of sacred history; and Chouet, who was afterwards taken from his professorship, and admitted into the government of the republic, was professor of natural philosophy. The other departments were filled with men, equally eminent in their several professions. Some of them were natives of Geneva, others were exiles from Italy and France, several were of noble families, and all of them were men of eminent piety. Under these great masters, Saurin became a student, and particularly applied himself to divinity, as he now began to think of devoting himself to the ministry, 1696. To dedicate one's self to the ministry in a wealthy, flourishing church, where rich benefices are every day becoming vacant, requires very little virtue, and sometimes only a strong propensity to vice; but to choose to be a minister in such a poor, banished, persecuted church as that of the French protestants, argues a noble contempt of the world, and a supreme love to God and to the souls of men. These are the best testimonials, however, of a young minister, whose profession is, not to enrich, but to *save himself, and them who hear him.* 1 Tim. iv. 16.

After Mr. Saurin had finished his studies, 1700, he visited Holland and England. In the first he made a very short stay; but in the last he staid almost five years, and preached with great acceptance among his fellow exiles in London. Of his person an idea may be formed by the annexed copper-plate, which is said to be a great likeness, and for which I am indebted to my ingenious friend Mr. Thomas Holloway. His dress was that of the French clergy, the gown and cassock. His address was perfectly genteel, a happy compound of the affable and the grave, at an equal distance from rusticity and feppery. His voice was strong, clear, and harmonious, and he never lost



lost the management of it. His style was pure, unaffected, and eloquent, sometimes plain, and sometimes flowery; but never improper, as it was always adapted to the audience, for whose sake he spoke. An Italian acquaintance of mine, who often heard him at the Hague, tells me, that in the introductions of his sermons he used to deliver himself in a tone modest and low; in the body of the sermon, which was adapted to the understanding, he was plain, clear, and argumentative, pausing at the close of each period, that he might discover, by the countenances and motions of his hearers, whether they were convinced by his reasoning; in his addresses to the wicked, (and it is a folly to preach as if there were none in our assemblies, Mr. Saurin knew mankind too well) he was often sonorous, but oftener a weeping suppliant at their feet. In the one he sustained the authoritative dignity of his office, in the other he expressed his Master's and his own benevolence to bad men, *praying them in Christ's stead to be reconciled to God.* 2 Cor. v. 20. In general, adds my friend, his preaching resembled a plentiful shower of dew, softly and imperceptibly insinuating itself into the minds of his numerous hearers, as the dew into the pores of plants, till the whole church was dissolved, and all in tears under his sermons. His doctrine was that of the French protestants, which, at that time, was moderate calvinism. He approved of the discipline of his own churches, which was presbyterian. He was an admirable scholar, and, which were his highest encomiums, he had an unconquerable aversion to sin, a supreme love to God and to the souls of men, and a holy unblemished life. Certainly he had some faults; but, as I have never heard of any, I can publish none.

During his stay in England, he married a Miss Catherine Boyton, in 1703, by whom he had a son, named Philip, who survived him; but wheth-

er he had any more children I know not. Two years after his marriage he returned to Holland, in 1705, where he had a mind to settle; but, the pastoral offices being all full, and meeting with no prospect of a settlement, though his preaching was received with universal applause, he was preparing to return to England, when a chaplainship to some of the nobility at the Hague, with a stipend, was offered to him. This situation exactly suited his wishes, and he accepted the place.

The Hague, it is said, is the finest village in Europe. It is the residence of the States General, of ambassadors and envoys from other courts, of a great number of nobility and gentry, and of a multitude of French refugees. The princes of Orange have a spacious palace here, and the chapel of the palace was given to the refugees for a place of public worship; and, it being too small to contain them, it was enlarged by above a half. This French church called him to be one of their pastors. He accepted the call, and continued in his office till his death. He was constantly attended by a very crowded and brilliant audience, was heard with the utmost attention and pleasure, and, what few ministers can say, the effects of his ministerial labours were seen in the holy lives of great numbers of his people.

When the princess of Wales, afterward Queen Caroline, passed through Holland in her way to England, Mr. Saurin had the honour of paying his respects to that illustrious lady. Her royal highness was pleased to single him out from the rest of the clergy, who were present, and to say to him, "Do not imagine that, being dazzled with the glory which this revolution seems to promise me, I have lost sight of that God from whom it proceeds. He hath been pleased to distinguish it with so many extraordinary marks, that

that I cannot mistake his divine hand; and, as I consider this long train of favours as immediately coming from him, to him alone I consecrate them." It is not astonishing, that Saurin speaks of condescension with rapture. They are the kind and christian actions of the governors of a free people, and not the haughty airs of a French tyrant, insulting his slaves; that attack and inflame the hearts of mankind. The history of this illustrious christian queen is not written in blood, and therefore it is always read with tears of grateful joy.

Her royal highness was so well satisfied of Mr. Saurin's merit, that soon after her arrival in England she ordered Dr. Boultar, who was preceptor to prince Frederick, the father of his present majesty, to write to Saurin, to draw up a treatise on the education of princes. Saurin immediately obeyed the order, and prefixed a dedication to the young princes. The book was never printed; but as it obtained the approbation of the princess of Wales, who was an incomparable judge, we may conclude that it was excellent in its kind. This was followed by a handsome present from the princess to the author.

His most considerable work was entitled, *Discourses, historical, critical, and moral, on the most memorable events of the old and new testament*. This work was undertaken by the desire of a Dutch merchant, who expended an immense sum in the engraving of a multitude of copper-plates, which adorn the work. It consists of six folio volumes. Mr. Saurin died before the third was finished; but Mr. Roques finished the third, and added a fourth on the old testament; and Mr. de Beaufovre subjoined two on the new testament. The whole is replete with very extensive learning, and well worth the careful perusal of students in divinity. The first of these was

translated into English by Chamberlayne, soon after its first publication in French.

Our author's *dissertation on the expedience of sometimes disguising the truth*, raised a furious clamour against him. He does not decide the question; but he seems to take the affirmative. This produced a paper war, and his antagonists unjustly censured his morals. The mildness of his disposition rendered him a desirable opponent, for though he was sure to conquer, yet he subdued his adversary so handsomely, that the captive was the better for his defeat. But others did not controvert with so much temper. Some wrote against him, others for him. At length the synod decided the dispute in his favour.

He published a small, but valuable piece, *on the state of christianity in France*. It treats of many important points of religion, in controversy between catholics and protestants. There is also a small *catechism* of his publishing, which I think worth the attention of such as educate children in the first principles of religion.

There are twelve volumes of his sermons. Some are dedicated to his majesty George II, and the king was pleased to allow him a handsome pension. Some to her majesty Queen Caroline, while she was princess of Wales. One to count Wassanaer, a Dutch nobleman. Two were dedicated to her majesty, after his decease, by his son. Professor Dumont, and Mr. Haffon, to whom Mr. Saurin left his manuscripts, published the rest, and one volume is dedicated to the countess Dowager of Albemarle. The English seem therefore to have a right to the labours of this great man.

Mr. Saurin died at the Hague, on Dec. 30th, 1730, aged 53, most sincerely regretted by all his acquaintances, as well as by his church, who lost in him a truly primitive christian minister,

who spent his life in watching over his flock, as one who knew he must give an account.

In regard to this translation, it was first undertaken by the desire of a small circle of private friends, for our mutual edification. If I have suffered my private opinion to be prevailed over by others to print this translation, it is not because I think myself able to give language to Saurin; but because I humbly hope that the sentiments of the author may be conveyed to the reader by it. His sentiments, I think, are, in general, those of the holy scripture, and his manner of treating them well adapted to impress them on the heart. I have endeavoured not to disguise his meaning, though I have not been able to adopt his style; for which defect, though I print them by private subscription, for the use of my friends, on whose candour I depend, yet I do not offer to publish them to the world for the language of Mr. Saurin. I should have been glad to have pleased every subscriber, by inserting those sermons, which were most agreeable to him, had I known which they were; but as this was impossible, I have followed my own judgment, or perhaps exposed my want of it. The first volume aims to secure the doctrine of a God, against the attacks of atheists. In the second, we mean to plead for the holy scriptures against deists. In the third, we intend to take those sermons, which treat of the *doctrines of christianity*, as we humbly conceive that the new testament is something more than a system of moral philosophy. And the last volume we dedicate to moral subjects, because we think christianity a holy religion, productive of moral obedience in all its true disciples. To this second edition a *fourth* volume is added on miscellaneous subjects. May the God of all grace bless the reading of them to the weakening of the dominion of sin, and to the advancement of the kingdom of our blessed Redeemer, Jesus Christ!



---

# SERMONS.

---

## SERMON I.

---

### THE OMNIPRESENCE OF GOD.

PSALM CXXXIX. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12.

*Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: If I make my bed in hell, behold thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea, even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee.*

**C**OULD I have one wish, to answer my proposed end of preaching to-day with efficacy, christians, it should be to shew you God in this assembly. Moses had such an advantage, no man therefore ever spoke with greater success. He gave the law to the people, in God the legislator's presence. He could say, This law which I give you, proceeds from God: here is his throne, there is his lightning, yonder is his thunder. Accordingly, never were a people more struck with a legislator's voice. Moses had hardly begun to speak, but, at least for that moment, all hearts were united, and all sinners exhibited with one voice, crying, "All that thou hast spoken we will do." Exod. xix. 8.

But.

But in vain are our sermons drawn from the sacred sources: in vain do we say to you, *Thus saith the Lord: you see only a man; you hear only a mortal voice in this pulpit; God hath put his treasure into earthen vessels*, 2 Cor. iv. 7. and our auditors, estimating the treasure by the meanness of the vessel, instead of supporting the meanness of the vessel for the sake of the treasure, hear us without respect, and, generally, derive no advantage from the ministry.

But were God present in this assembly, could we shew you the Deity amongst you, authorizing our voice by his approbation and presence, and examining with what dispositions you hear his word, which of you, which of you, my brethren, could resist so eminent and so noble a motive?

Christians, this idea is not destitute of reality: God is every where; he is in this church. Vails of flesh and blood prevent your sight of him: these must fall, and you must open the eyes of your spirits, if you would see a God, who is a spirit, John iv. 24. Hear our prophet: hear his magnificent description of the imminity and omnipresence of God, "Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there; if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; even there shalt thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee."

In a text less abundant in riches, we might make some remarks on the terms *spirit* and *presence*; but we will content ourselves at present with indicating what ideas we annex to them, by observing, that by the *spirit* and *presence* of God,



we understand God himself. I know, some divines discover great mysteries in these terms, and tell us, that there are some passages in scripture where the word *presence* means the second person in the most holy Trinity, and where the term *spirit* is certainly to be understood of the third. But as there are some passages where these terms have not this signification, it is beyond all doubt that this, which we are explaining, is precisely of the latter kind. However, if any dispute our comment, we shall leave them to dispute it; for it would be unjust to consume that time, which is dedicated to the edification of a whole congregation, in resolving a particular opinion. The other expressions in our text, *heaven, bell; the wings of the morning*, a figurative expression, denoting the rapidity of the light in communicating itself from one end of the world to the other; these expressions, I say, need no comment. The *presence* of God, the *spirit* of God, signify then the divine essence; and this assemblage of ideas, *whither shall I go from thy spirit? whither shall I flee from thy presence?* means, that God is immense, and that he is present in every place.

But wherein consists this immensity and omnipresence? If ever a question required developing, this certainly does; not only because it presents to the mind an abstract subject, which does not fall under the observation of the senses, but because many who have treated this matter, (pardon an opinion which does not proceed from a desire of opposing any individual, but only from a love to the truth) many who have handled the subject, have contributed more to perplex, than to explain it. We may observe, in general, that, unless we be wholly unacquainted with the history of the sciences, it is impossible not to acknowledge; that all questions about the nature of spirits, all that are any way related to metaphysics,

ics, were very little understood before the time of that celebrated philosopher, whom God seems to have bestowed on the world to purify reason, as he had some time before raised up others to purify religion.

What heaps of crude and indigested notions do we find, among the schoolmen, of the immensity of God? One said, God was a point, indivisible indeed, but a point, however, that had the peculiar property of occupying every part of the universe. Another, that God was the place of all beings, the immense extent in which his power had placed them. Another, that his essence was *really* in heaven, but yet, *repletively*, as they express it, in every part of the universe. In short, this truth hath been obscured by the grossest ignorance. Whatever aversion we have to the decisive tone, we will venture to affirm, that people, who talked in this manner of God, had no ideas themselves of what they advanced.

Do not be afraid of our conducting you into these wild mazes; do not imagine that we will busy ourselves in exposing all these notions, for the sake of labouring to refute them. We will content ourselves with giving you some light into the omnipresence of God:

I. By removing those false ideas, which, at first, seem to present themselves to the imagination;

II. By assigning the true.

I. Let us remove the false ideas, which, at first, present themselves to the imagination; as if, when we say that God is present in any place, we mean that he is actually contained therein; as if, when we say that God is in every place, we mean to assign to him a real and proper extension.

\* The philosopher, intended by Mr. S. I suppose, is his countryman Descartes, born in 1596. Vie de Descartes par Baillet.

sion. Neither of these is assigned; and to remove these ideas, my brethren, two reflections are sufficient.

God is a spirit. A spirit cannot be in a place, at least in the manner in which we conceive of place.

1. God is a spirit. What relation can you find between wisdom, power, mercy, and all the other attributes, which enter into your notion of the divinity, and the nature of bodies? Pulverize matter, give it all the different forms of which it is susceptible, elevate it to its highest degree of attainment, make it vast and immense, moderate or small, luminous or obscure, opaque or transparent; these will never result any thing but figures, and never will you be able, by all these combinations or divisions, to produce one single sentiment, one single thought, like that of the meanest and most contracted of all mankind. If matter then cannot be the subject of one single operation of the soul of a mechanic, how shall it be the subject of those attributes which make the essence of God himself?

But perhaps God, who is spiritual in one part of his essence, may be corporeal in another part, like man, who, although he hath a spiritual soul, is yet united to a portion of matter. No; for, however admirable in man that union of spiritual and sensible may be, and those laws which unite his soul to his body, nothing more fully marks his weakness and dependence, and consequently nothing can less agree with the divine essence. Is it not a mark of the dependence of an immortal and intelligent soul, to be enveloped in a little flesh and blood, which, according to their different motions, determine his joy or sorrow, his happiness or misery? Is it not a mark of the weakness of our spirits, to have the power of acting only on that little matter to which we are united, and to have no power over more? Who

can imagine that God hath such limits? He hath no body: he is united to none; yet he is united to all. That celebrated philosopher, shall I call him? or atheist\* who said that the assemblage of all existences constituted the divine essence, who would have us consider all corporeal beings as the body of the divinity, published a great extravagance, if he meant that the divine essence consisted of this assemblage. But there is a very just sense, in which it may be said that the whole universe is the body of the Deity. The effect, as I call this portion of matter my body, which I move, act, and direct as I please, so God actuates by his will every part of the universe: he obscures the sun, he calms the winds, he commands the sea. But this very notion excludes all corporeity from God, and proves that God is a spirit. If God sometimes represents himself with feet, with hands, with eyes, he means in these portraits, rather to give us examples of his attributes, than images (properly speaking) of any parts which he possesses. Therefore, when he attributes these to himself, he gives them so vast an extent, that we easily perceive they are not to be grossly understood. Hath he hands? they are hands which weigh the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance, which measure the waters in the hollow of his hand, and mete out the heavens with a span, Isa. lx. 12. Hath he eyes? they are eyes that penetrate the most unmeasurable distances. Hath he feet? they are feet which reach from heaven to earth, for the heaven is his throne, and the earth is his footstool, ch. lxvi. 1. Hath he a voice? it is as the sound of many waters, breaking the cedars of Lebanon, making mount Sion skip.

\* Mr. S. means, I should suppose, Spinoza; whose system of atheism, says a sensible writer, is more gross, and therefore less dangerous, than others; his poison carrying its antidote with it.

*ship like an unicorn, and the binds to calve,*  
Psal. xxix. 3; 5; 6; 9.

This reminds me of a beautiful passage in Plato. He says that the gods, particularly the chief god, the ineffable beauty, as he calls him, cannot be conceived of but by the understanding only, and by quitting sensible objects; that, in order to contemplate the divinity, terrestrial ideas must be surmounted; that the eyes cannot see him; that the ears cannot hear him. A thought which Julian the apostate, a great admirer of that philosopher, so nobly expresses in his satire on the Cæsars. Thus every thing serves to establish our first principle, that God is a spirit.

2. But to prove that God is a spirit, and to prove that he occupies no place, at least as our imagination conceives, is, in our opinion, to establish the same thesis.

I know how difficult it is to make this consequence intelligible and clear, not only to those who have never been accustomed to meditation, and who are therefore more excusable for having confused ideas; but even to such as, having cultivated the sciences, are most intent on refining their ideas. I freely acknowledge, that after we have used our utmost efforts to rise above sense and matter, it will be extremely difficult to conceive the existence of a spirit, without conceiving it in a certain place. Yet, I think, whatever difficulty there may be in the system of those who maintain that an immaterial being cannot be in a place, properly so called, there are greater difficulties still in the opposite opinion: for, what is immaterial hath no parts; what hath no parts hath no form; what hath no form hath no extension; what hath no extension can have no situation in place, properly so called. For what is it to be in place? is it not to fill space? is it not to be adjusted with surrounding bodies?

bodies? how adjust with surrounding bodies without parts? how consist of parts without being corporeal? But if you ascribe a real and proper extension to a spirit, every thought of that spirit would be a separate portion of that extension, as every part of the body is a separate portion of the whole body; every operation of spirit would be a modification of that extension, as every operation of body is a modification of body; and, were this the case, there would be no absurdity in saying that a thought is round, or square, or cubic, which is nothing less than the confounding of spirit with matter. Thus the idea, which our imagination forms of the omnipresence of God, when it represents the essence of the Supreme Being filling infinite spaces, as we are lodged in our houses, is a false idea that ought to be carefully avoided.

II. What notions then must we form of the immensity of God? In what sense do we conceive that the infinite Spirit is every where present? My brethren, the bounds of our knowledge are so strait, our sphere is so contracted, we have such imperfect ideas of spirits, even of our own spirits, and, for a much stronger reason, of the Father of spirits, that no genius in the world, however exalted you may suppose him, after his greatest efforts of meditation, can say to you, Thus far extend the attributes of God; behold a complete idea of his immensity and omnipresence. Yet, by the help of sound reason, above all by the aid of revelation, we may give you, if not complete, at least distinct ideas of the subject: it is possible, if not to indicate all the senses in which God is immense, at least to point out some: it is possible, if not to shew you all the truth, at least to discover it in part.

Let us not conceive the omnipresence of God at a particular attribute (if I may venture to say so) of the Deity, as goodness or wisdom, but as  
the

the extent or infinity of many others. The omnipresence of God is that universal property by which he communicates himself to all, diffuses himself through all, is the great director of all, or, to confine ourselves to more distinct ideas still, the infinite spirit is present in every place.

1. By a boundless knowledge.

2. By a general influence.

3. By an universal direction.

God is every where, because he *seeth* all, because he *influenceth* all, because he *directeth* all. This we must prove and establish. But if you would judge rightly of what you have heard, and of what you may still hear, you must remember that this subject hath no relation to your pleasures, nor to your policy, nor to any of those objects which occupy and fill your whole souls; and consequently, that if you would follow us, you must stretch your meditation, and go, as it were, out of yourselves.

1. The first idea of God's omnipresence is his *omniscience*. God is every where present, because he *seeth* all. This the prophet had principally in view. "O Lord, thou hast searched me, and known me. Thou knowest my down-sitting and mine up-rising, thou understandest my thoughts afar off. Thou compassedst my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether. Thou hast beset me behind and before. Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it," ver. 1, 2, 3, &c. Then follow the words of our text: "Whither shall I go from thy spirit," and so on.

Let us not then consider the Deity, after the example of the schoolmen, as a point fixed in the universality of beings. Let us consider the universality of beings as a point, and the Deity as an immense eye, which sees all that passes in

that point, all that can possibly pass there; and which, by an all-animating intelligence, makes an exact combination of all the effects of matter, and of all the dispositions of spirit.

1. God knows all the effects of matter. An expert workman takes a parcel of matter proportioned to a work which he meditates, he makes divers wheels, disposes them properly, and sees, by the rules of his art, what must result from their assemblage. Suppose a sublime, exact genius, knowing how to go from principle to principle, and from consequence to consequence, after foreseeing what must result from two wheels joined together, should imagine a third, he will as certainly know what must result from a third, as from a first and second; after imagining a third, he may imagine a fourth, and properly arrange it with the rest in his imagination; after a fourth a fifth, and so on to an endless number. Such a man could mathematically demonstrate, in an exact and infallible manner, what must result from a work composed of all these different wheels. Suppose further, that this workman, having accurately considered the effects which would be produced on these wheels, by that subtle matter which in their whirlings continually surrounds them, and which, by its perpetual action and motion, chafes, wears, and dissolves all bodies; this workman would tell you, with the same exactness, how long each of these wheels would wear, and when the whole work would be consumed. Give this workman life and industry proportional to his imagination, furnish him with materials proportional to his ideas, and he will produce a vast, immense work, all the different motions of which he can exactly comb; all the different effects of which he can evidently foresee. He will see, in what time motion will be communicated from the first of these wheels to the second, at what time the second will move the



## The Omnipresence of God 17

the third, and so of the rest: he will foretell all their different motions, and all the effects which must result from their different combinations.

Hitherto this is only supposition, my brethren; but it is a supposition that conducts us to the most certain of all facts. This workman is God. God is this sublime, exact, infinite genius. He calls into being matter, without motion, and, in some sense, without form. He gives this matter form and motion. He makes a certain number of wheels, or rather he makes them without number. He disposes them as he thinks proper. He communicates a certain degree of motion, agreeable to the laws of his wisdom. Thence arises the world which strikes our eyes. By the forementioned example, I conceive, that God, by his own intelligence, saw what must result from the arrangement of all the wheels that compose this world, and knew, with the utmost exactness, all their combinations. He saw that a certain degree of motion, imparted to a certain portion of matter, would produce water; that another degree of motion, communicated to another portion of matter, would produce fire; that another would produce earth, and so of the rest. He foresaw, with the utmost precision, what would result from this water, from this fire, from this earth when joined together, and agitated by such a degree of motion as he should communicate. By the bare inspection of the laws of motion, he foresaw fires, he foresaw shipwrecks, he foresaw earthquakes, he foresaw all the vicissitudes of time, he foresaw those which must put a period to time; when *the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, when the elements shall melt with fervent heat, when the earth with all the works that are in it shall be burnt up*, 2 Pet. iii. 10.

2. But, if God could combine all that would result from the laws of motion communicated to matter, he could also combine all that would result

ult from intelligence, freedom of will, and all the faculties which make the essence of spirits; and, before he had formed those spiritual beings which compose the intelligent world, he knew what all their ideas, all their projects, all their deliberations, would for ever be.

I am aware, that a particular consequence, which follows this doctrine, hath made some divines exclaim against this thesis, and, under the specious pretence of exculpating the Deity from the entrance of sin into this world, they have affirmed that God could not foresee the determinations of a free agent; for, say they, had he foreseen the abuse which man would have made of his liberty, by resolving to sin, his love to holiness would have engaged him to prevent it. But to reason in this manner is, in attempting to solve a difficulty, to have that difficulty in all its force.

All they say on this article, proceeds from this principle, that a God infinitely just, and infinitely powerful, ought to display (if it be allowable to say so) all the infinity of his attributes to prevent sin. But this principle is notoriously false. Witness that very permission of sin which is objected to us. You will not acknowledge that God foresaw man's fall into sin: acknowledge, at least, that he foresaw the possibility of man's falling, and that, in forming a creature free, he knew that such a creature might chase virtue or vice; acknowledge, at least, that God could have created man with so much knowledge, and could have afforded him so many succours; he could have presented such powerful motives to holiness incessantly, and discovered to him the dreadful consequences of his rebellion so effectually; he could have united obedience to his commands with so many delights, and the most distant thought of disobedience with so many disgusts; he could have banished from man every tempta-  
tion

## *The Omnipresence of God.* 29

tion to sin, so that he would never have been a sinner. Yet God created man in another manner; consequently it is not true, even in your system, that God hath exerted all the power he could to prevent sin's entrance into the world. Consequently it is false, that a Being, who perfectly loves holiness, ought to display the whole extent of his attributes to prevent sin, and to establish virtue. Consequently, the principle on which you ground your denial of God's comprehension of all the dispositions of spirits, is an unwarrantable principle, and to attempt to solve the difficulty in this manner, is to leave it in all its force.

But if you consult revelation, you will find that God claims an universal knowledge of spirits. He says, he *searcheth and knoweth them*, Jer. xvii. 10. Rev. ii. 23. He foresaw, he foretold, the afflictions which Abraham's posterity would endure in Canaan, Gen. xv. 13. the hardening of Pharaoh, the infidelity of the Jews, the faith of the Gentiles, the crucifixion of the Messiah, Exod. iii. 19, the coming of the prince or leader, that is of Vespasian, or Titus, who would *destroy the city and the sanctuary*, Dan. ix. 25, 26. And consequently, we have a right to affirm, that God knows all the thoughts of the mind, and all the sentiments of the heart, as well as that he knows all the motions of matter.

Perhaps you wish, my brethren, that our speculations were carried further; perhaps you would have us disentangle the subject from all its difficulties; perhaps you wish we could make you comprehend, in a clear and distinct manner, how it is possible that such immense objects can be always present to the Supreme Intelligence; but what mortal tongue can express such sublime truths, or what capacity is able to conceive them? On this article, we are obliged with our prophet to exclaim, *such knowledge is too wonderful*

## 30 The Omnipresence of God.

derful for me; it is high; I cannot attain unto it: ver. 6. In general, we conceive that the sphere of divine knowledge is not contracted by any of the limits that confine the spirits of mankind.

The human spirit is united to a portion of matter. Man can perform no operation without the agitation of his brain, without the motion of his animal spirits; without the help of his senses. But the brain wearies, the spirits evaporate, the senses are blunted, and the minutest alteration of body clogs the most penetrating and active genius. But God, as we have represented him, thinks, understands, meditates, without brain, without spirits, without any need of senses; not participating their nature, he never participates their alteration, and thus hath intelligence immediately from the treasure of intelligence itself.

The spirit of man owes its existence to a superior spirit, to a foreign cause, to a Being who gives him only such ideas as he thinks proper, and who hath been pleased to conceal numberless mysteries from him. But God, God not only does not owe his existence to a foreign cause, but all that exist derive their existence from him. His ideas were the models of all beings, and he hath only to contemplate himself perfectly to know them.

The spirit of man is naturally a finite spirit; he can consider only one circle of objects at once, many ideas confound him; if he would see too much, he sees nothing; he must successively contemplate what he cannot contemplate in one moment. But God is an infinite spirit; with one single look he beholdeth the whole universe. This is the first idea of the omnipresence of God. As I am accounted present in this auditory, because I see the objects that are here, because I am witness of all that passes here; so God is every where, because he sees all, because veils the  
most

most impenetrable, darkness the most thick, distances the most immense, can conceal nothing from his knowledge. Soar to the utmost heights, fly into the remotest climates, wrap thyself in the blackest darkness, every where, every where, thou wilt be under his eye. "Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?"

But, 2. The knowledge of God is not a bare knowledge, his presence is not an idle presence; it is an active knowledge, it is a presence accompanied with action and motion. We said just now, that God was every where, because he *influenced* all, as far as influence could agree with his perfections. Remark this restriction, for as we are discussing a subject the most fertile in controversy, and as, in a discourse of an hour, it is impossible to answer all objections, which may be all answered elsewhere, we would give a general preservative against every mistake. We mean an influence which agrees with the divine perfections; and if from any of our general propositions, you infer any consequences injurious to those perfections, you may conclude, from that very reason, that you have stretched them beyond their due bounds. We repeat it then, God *influenceth* all things, as far as such influence agrees with his perfections.

When new beings appear, he is there. He influences their production. He gives to all *life, motion, and being*, Acts xvii. 28. "Thou, even thou art Lord alone, thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens with all their host, the earth and all things that are therein, the seas and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all, and the host of heaven worshippeth thee," Neh. ix. 6. "O Lord, I will praise thee, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; marvellous are thy works, and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made

made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. Thine eyes did see my substance yet being unperfect, and in thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them," Psal. cxxxix. 14, 15; 16. "Thine hands have made me, and fashioned me together round about. Thou hast clothed me with skin and flesh, and hast fenced me with bones and sinews."

When beings are preserved, he is there. He influences their preservation: "Thy mercy, O Lord, is in the heavens, and thy faithfulness reacheth unto the clouds. Thou preservest man and beast," Psal. xxxvi. 5, 6. "When thou openest thy hand they are filled with good: thou hidest thy face they are troubled; thou takest away their breath they die, and return to their dust. Thou sendest forth thy spirit they are created, and thou renewest the face of the earth," Psal. civ. 28, 29, 30.

When the world is disordered, he is there. He influenceth wars, pestilences, famines, and all the vicissitudes which disorder the world. If nature refuse her productions, it is because he hath made the heaven as iron, and the earth as brass, Lev. xxvi. 19. If peace succeed war, he makes both. If lions slay the inhabitants of Samaria, it is the Lord who sends them, 2 Kings xvii. 25. When tempestuous winds break down these immense banks which your industry has opposed to them; when a devouring fire reduceth your houses to ashes, it is he who makes the winds his messengers, and his ministers flames of fire, Psal. civ. 4.

When every thing succeeds according to our wishes, he is there. He influenceth prosperity. "Except the Lord build the house, they labour in vain that build it. Except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain. It is  
vain

vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late, to eat the bread of sorrows. It is God who giveth his beloved sleep," Psal. cxxvii. 1, 2.

When our understanding is informed, he is there. He influenceth our knowledge. For *in his light we see light*, Psal. xxxvi. 9. "He lighteth every man that cometh into the world," John i. 9.

When our heart disposeth us to our duties, he is there. He influenceth our virtues. It is he who *worketh in us, both to will and to do of his own good pleasure*, Phil. ii. 13. It is he who *giveth us not only to believe but to suffer for his sake*, chap. i. 29. It is he who *giveth to all that ask him liberally and upbraiderb not*, James i. 5.

When the grossest errors cover us, he is there. He influenceth errors. It is God who *sends strong delusions that men should believe a lie*, 2 Thess. ii. 11. "Go make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes, lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears," Isa. vi. 10.

When we violate the laws of righteousness, he is there. He influenceth sins, even the greatest sins. Witness Pharaoh, whose *heart he hardened*, Exod. iv. 21. Witness Shimei, whom *the Lord bade to curse David*, 2 Sam. xvi. 11. Witness what Isaiah said, *the Lord hath mingled a perverse spirit in the midst of Egypt*, chap. xix. 14.

When magistrates, our earthly gods, consult and deliberate, he is there. He influenceth policy. It is he who *hath the hearts of kings in his hand, and turneth them as the rivers of water*, Prov. xxi. 1. It is he who *giveth kings in his anger, and taketh them away in his wrath*, Hosea xiii. 11. It is he who *maketh the Assyrian the rod of his anger*, Isa. x. 5. "Herod and Pilate, the Gentiles and the people of Israel,

did what his hand and his counsel determined before to be done," Acts iv. 27, 28.

When we live, when we die, he is there. He influenceth life and death. "Man's days are determined, the number of his months are with him, he has appointed his bounds that he cannot pass," Job xiv. 5. "To God the Lord belongs the issues from death," Psal. lxxviii. 20. "He bringeth down to the grave, and bringeth up," 1 Sam. ii. 6.

He influences the least events, as well as the most considerable. Not being fatigued with the care of great things, he can occupy himself about the smallest without prejudice to the rest; *number the hairs of our heads*, and not let even *a sparrow fall without his will*, Matt. x. 29, 30.

But, 3. When God communicates himself to all, when he thus acts on all, when he diffuseth himself thus through the whole, he connects all with his own designs, and makes all serve his own counsels: and this is our third idea of his immensity and omnipresence. God is present with all, because he *directs* all.

Doth he call the creatures into existence? it is to manifest his perfections. It is to have subjects on whom he may shower his favours; it is, as it were, to go out of himself, and to form through the whole universe a concert, resounding the Creator's existence and glory. "For the invisible things of God, even his eternal power and godhead, are understood by the things that are made," Rom. i. 20. "The heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament sheweth his handy-work. Day unto day uttereth speech, night unto night sheweth knowledge. There is no speech nor language where their voice is not heard," Psal. xix. 1, 2, 3.

Doth he preserve his creatures? it is to answer his own designs, the depth of which no finite mind can fathom; but designs which we shall  
one



one day know, and admire his wisdom when we know them, as we adore it now, though we know them not.

Doth he send plagues, wars, famines? it is to make those feel his justice who have abused his goodness; it is to avenge the violation of his law, the contempt of his gospel, the forgetting and forsaking of the interest of his church.

Doth he afford us prosperity? it is to *draw us with the bands of love*, Hosea xi. 4. it is to reveal himself to us by that love which is his essence; it is to engage us to imitate him, who *never leaves himself without witness in doing good*, Acts xiv. 17.

Doth he impart knowledge to us? it is to discover the snares that surround us, the miseries that threaten us, the origin from which we sprang, the course of life we should follow, and the end at which we should aim.

Doth he communicate virtues? it is to animate us in our race; it is to convince us that there is a mighty arm to raise us from the abyss into which our natural corruption hath plunged us; it is that we may *work out our own salvation with fear and trembling, knowing that God worketh in us to will and to do of his own good pleasure*, Phil. ii. 12, 13.

Doth he send us error? it is to make us respect that truth which we have resisted.

Doth he abandon us to our vices? it is to punish us for some other vices which we have committed voluntarily and freely; so that, if we could comprehend it, his love for holiness never appears more clearly, than when he abandons men to vice in this manner:

Doth he raise up kings? it is always to oblige them to administer justice, to protect the widow and the orphan, to maintain order and religion. Yet he often permits them to violate equity, to oppress their people, and to become the scourges

of

## 36 *The Omnipresence of God.*

of his anger. By them he frequently teacheth us how little account he makes of human grandours, seeing he bestows them sometimes upon unworthy men, upon men allured by voluptuousness, governed by ambition, and dazzled with their own glory, upon men who ridicule piety, sell their consciences, negotiate faith and religion, sacrificing the souls of their children to the infamous passions that govern themselves.

Doth he prolong our life? it is because he is long suffering to us, 2 Pet. iii. 9. it is because he opens in our favour the riches of his goodness and forbearance, to lead us to repentance, Rom. ii. 4.

Doth he call us to die? it is to open those eternal books in which our actions are registered; it is to gather our souls into his bosom, to bind them up in the bundle of life, 1 Sam. xxv. 29. to mix them with the ransomed armies of all nations, tongues, and people, Rev. vii. 9.

Such are our ideas of the omnipresence of God. Thus God seeth all, influenceth all, directeth all. In this sense we are to understand this magnificent language of scripture, "Will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold the heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain thee," 1 Kings viii. 27. "Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool," Isa. lxvi. 1. "Where is the house that ye build unto me? do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord. Am I God at hand, and not afar off? Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him?" Jer. xxiii. 23, 24. This is what the heathens had a glimpse of, when they said, that God was a circle, the centre of which was every where, and its circumference no where. That all things were full of Jupiter. That he filled all his works. That, fly whither we would, we were always before his eyes. This is what the followers of Mahomet meant, when they said, that  
where

where there were two persons, God made the third; where there were three, God made the fourth. Above all, this was our prophet's meaning throughout the Psalm, a part of which we have explained. "O Lord, thou hast searched me and known me. Thou knowest my down-sitting and mine up-rising, thou understandest my thoughts afar off. Thou compassedst my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether. Thou hast beset me behind and before, and laid thine hand upon me. Such knowledge is too wonderful for me, I cannot attain unto it. Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there; if I make my bed in hell, behold thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee," ver. 1, &c.

But perhaps, during the course of this meditation, you may have murmured at our presenting an object, of which all the preaching in the world can give you only imperfect ideas. Suspend your judgments; we are going to shew you whither this discourse, all glimmering as it is, ought to conduct you. We are going to see what salutary consequences follow our efforts, even the weak efforts that we have been making, to explain the grandeur and omnipresence of God. Let us pass to the conclusion, the chief design of this discourse.

1. Our first reflection is on *the difficulties we meet with in fixing our minds on such subjects*

## 86 The Omnipresence of God.

as we have been hearing. You have doubtless experienced; if you have endeavoured to follow us, that you are weary, and wander when you would go beyond matter. Our minds find almost nothing real, where they meet with nothing sensible. As if the whole essence of beings were corporeal, the mind loseth its way when it ceaseth to be directed by bodies, and it needs the help of imagination to represent even those things which are not susceptible of images; and yet whatever is most grand and noble in the nature of beings, is spirit. The sublimest objects, angels who are continually before God, *seraphims* who cover their faces in his presence, *Isa. vi. 2.* cherubims who are the ministers of his will, *thousand thousands which minister unto him, ten thousand times ten thousand which stand before him, Dan. vii. 10.* what is most glorious in man, what elevates him above other animals, a soul made in the image of God himself, the Being of beings, the Sovereign Beauty; all these beings are spiritual, abstract, free from sense and matter. Moreover, what pleases and enchants us in bodies, even that comes from a subject abstract, spiritual and corporeal. Without your soul, aliments have no taste, flowers no smell, the earth no enamel, fire no heat, the stars no brilliancy, the sun no light. Matter of itself is void, and gross, destitute of all the qualities with which our imagination clothes it, and which are proper to our souls. What ought we to conclude from this reflection? My brethren, have you no idea of your dignity, and primitive grandeur? Have you not even yet some faint resemblances of beings formed in the Creator's image? You ought, feeble as you are, confined as you are in a manner to matter, you should deplore your misery; you should groan under that necessity, which, in some sort, confounds your souls with a little dust; you should sigh after that happy state in which

which your rapid, free, and unclogged spirits, shall meditate like themselves. This is the first duty we should prescribe to you.

2. Our next reflection is on *the majesty of our religion*. That must certainly be thought the true religion which gives us the noblest ideas of God. Let our religion be judged by this rule. Where do we see the attributes of the Supreme Being placed in so clear a light? what can be more noble than this idea of God? what can be conceived more sublime than a Being whom nothing escapes, before whom *all things are naked and open*, Heb. iv. 13. who, by one single look, fully comprehends all beings, past, present, and to come, all that do exist, all that possibly can exist; who thinks, in the same instant, with equal facility on bodies and spirits, on all the dimensions of time and of matter? What more noble can be conceived than a Being who imparteth himself to all, diffuseth himself through all, influenceth all, giveth life and motion to all? What can be conceived more noble than a Being who directeth the conduct of the whole universe, who knoweth how to make all concur to his designs, who knoweth how to connect alike with the laws of order and equity, the virtues of the righteous, the vices of the wicked, the praises of the happy, the blasphemies of the victims sacrificed to his vengeance in hell? When we find in any heathen philosopher, amidst a thousand false notions, amidst a thousand wild imaginations, some few leaves of the flowers with which our bibles are strewed, we are ready to cry a miracle, a miracle, we transmit these shreds of the Deity (if I may be allowed to speak so) to the most distant posterity, and these ideas, all defective, and all defiled as they are, procure their authors immortal reputation. On this principle, what respect, what veneration, what deference ought we to have for the patriarchs and the prophets, for the evangelists

ists and the apostles, who spoke of God in so sublime a manner ! However, be not surprised at their superiority over the great pagan geniuses ; had the biblical writers, like them, been guided only by human reason, like them they would have wandered too. If they spoke so nobly of God, it was because they had received that *spirit who searcheth all things, yea the deep things of God*, 1 Cor. ii. 10. It was because *all scripture was given by inspiration*, 2 Tim. iii. 16. It was because *the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost*, 2 Pet. i. 21.

3. Make a third reflection. *This attribute of God removes the greatest stumbling-blocks that sceptics and infidels pretend to meet with in religion.* It justifies all those dark mysteries which are above the comprehension of our feeble reason. We would not make use of this reflection to open a way for human fancies, and to authorize every thing that is presented to us under the idea of the marvellous. All doctrines that are incomprehensible are not divine, nor ought we to embrace any opinion merely because it is beyond our knowledge. But when a religion, in other respects, hath good guarantees, when we have good arguments to prove that such a revelation comes from heaven, when we certainly know that it is God who speaks, ought we to be surprised, if ideas of God, which come so fully authenticated, absorb and confound us ? I freely grant, that, had I consulted my own reason only, I could not have discovered some mysteries of the gospel. Nevertheless, when I think on the immensity of God, when I cast my eyes on that vast ocean, when I consider that immense all, nothing astonishes me, nothing stumbles me, nothing seems to me inadmissible, how incomprehensible soever it may be. When the subject is divine, I am ready to believe all, to admit all, to receive all ; provided

vided I be convinced that it is God himself who speaks to me, or any one on his part. After this, I am no more astonished that there are three distinct persons in one divine essence; one God, and yet a Father, a Son, and a Holy Ghost. After this, I am no more astonished that God foresees all without forcing any; permits sin without forcing the sinner; ordains free and intelligent creatures to such and such ends, yet without destroying their intelligence or their liberty. After this, I am no more astonished that the justice of God required a satisfaction proportional to his greatness, that his own love hath provided that satisfaction, and that God, from the abundance of his compassion, designed the mystery of an incarnate God; a mystery which angels admire while sceptics oppose; a mystery which absorbs human reason, but which fills all heaven with songs of praise; a mystery which is the *great mystery*, by excellence, 1 Tim. iii. 16. but the greatness of which nothing should make us reject, since religion proposeth it as the grand effort of the wisdom of the incomprehensible God, and commandeth us to receive it on the testimony of the incomprehensible God himself. Either religion must tell us nothing about God, or what it tells us must be beyond our capacities, and, in discovering even the borders of this immense ocean, it must needs exhibit a vast extent in which our feeble eyes are lost. But what surprises me, what stumbles me, what frightens me, is to see a diminutive creature, a contemptible man, a little ray of light glimmering through a few feeble organs, controvert a point with the Supreme Being, oppose that Intelligence who sitteth at the helm of the world; question what he affirms, dispute what he determines, appeal from his decisions, and, even after God hath given evidence, reject all doctrines that are beyond his capacity. Enter into thy nothingness, mortal creature.

creature. What madness animates thee? How dar'st thou pretend, thou who art but a point, thou whose essence is but an atom, to measure thyself with the Supreme Being, with him who fills heaven and earth, with him whom *heaven, the heaven of heavens cannot contain?* 1 Kings. viii. 27. "Canst thou by searching find out God? Canst thou find out the Almighty to perfection? High as heaven, what canst thou do? deeper than hell, what canst thou know?" Job xi. 7. "He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing. He bindeth up the waters in his thick clouds, the pillars of heaven tremble, and are astonished at his reproof: Lo these are parts of his ways, but how little a portion is heard of him? but the thunder of his power who can understand? Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me. Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding," ch. xxvi. 7, 11, 14. "Who hath laid the measures thereof? who hath stretched the line upon it? whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? who laid the corner-stone thereof, when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy? Who shut up the sea with doors, when I made the cloud the garment thereof, and thick darkness a swaddling band for it? when I brake up for it my decreed place, and set bars and doors, and said, Hitherto shalt thou come and no further: and here shall thy proud waves be stayed?" ch. xxxviii. 1, 2, 3, &c. "He that reproveth God, let him answer this," ch. xl. 2. "O Lord, such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is too high, I cannot attain unto it!"

4. But, my brethren, shall these be the only inferences from our text? shall we reap only speculations from this discourse? shall we only believe, admire, and exclaim? Ah! from this  
idea.



idea of God, I see *all the virtues issue which religion prescribes!*

If such be the grandeur of the God I adore, miserable wretch! what ought my *repentance* to be! I, a contemptible worm, I, a creature whom God could tread beneath his feet, and crush into dust by a single act of his will, I have rebelled against the great God, I have endeavoured to *provoke him to jealousy*, as if I had been *stronger than he*, 1 Cor. x. 22. I have insulted that Majesty which the angels of heaven adore; I have attacked God, with madness and boldness, on his throne, and in his empire. Is it possible to feel remorse too cutting for sins which the majesty of the offended, and the littleness of the offender, make so very atrocious?

If such be the grandeur of God, what should our *humility* be! Grandees of the world, mortal divinities, who swell with vanity in the presence of God, oppose yourselves to the immense God. Behold his eternal ideas, his infinite knowledge, his general influence, his universal direction; enter his immense ocean of perfections and virtues, what are ye? a grain of dust, a point, an atom, a nothing.

If such be the grandeur of God, what ought our *confidence* to be! "If God be for us, who can be against us?" Rom. viii. 31. Poor creature, tossed about the world, as by so many winds, by hunger, by sickness, by persecution, by misery, by nakedness, by exile; fear not in a vessel of which God himself is the pilot.

But above all, if such be the grandeur of God, if God be every where present, what should our *vigilance* be! and, to return to the idea with which we began, what impression should this thought make on reasonable souls! *God seeth me. When thou wast under the fig-tree*, said Jesus Christ to Nathaniel, *I saw thee*, John i. 48. See Eccles. iii. 23, 24, 25. We do not know  
what

## 44 The Omnipresence of God.

what Jesus Christ saw under the fig-tree, nor is it necessary now to inquire; but it was certainly something which, Nathaniel was fully persuaded, no mortal eye had seen. As soon, therefore, as Jesus Christ had uttered these words, he believed, and said, *Rabbi, thou art the Christ, the son of the living God.* My brethren, God useth the same language to each of you to-day: *when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.*

Thou hypocrite, when wrapped in a veil of religion, embellished with exterior piety, thou concealedst an impious heart, and didst endeavour to impose on God and man, *I saw thee.* I penetrated all those labyrinths, I dissipated all those darkneses, I dived into all thy deep designs.

Thou worldling, who, with a prudence truly infernal, hast the art of giving a beautiful tint to the most odious objects; who appearest not to hate thy neighbour, because thou dost not openly attack him; not to falsify thy promise, because thou hast the art of eluding it; not to oppress thy dependents, because thou knowest how to impose silence on them: *I saw thee,* when thou gavest those secret stabs, when thou didst receive those bribes, and didst accumulate those wages of unrighteousness, which cry for vengeance against thee.

Thou slave to sensuality, ashamed of thine excesses before the face of the sun, *I saw thee,* when, with bars and bolts, with obscurity and darkness, and complicated precautions, thou didst hide thyself from the eyes of men, *defile the temple of God, and make the members of Christ the members of a barlot,* 1 Cor. vi. 15.

My brethren, the discourses, which we usually preach to you, absorb your minds in a multitude of ideas. A collection of moral ideas, perhaps confound instead of instructing you, and when we attempt to engage you in too many reflections, you enter really into none. Behold an epitome  
of

of religion. Behold a morality in three words. Return to your houses, and every where carry this reflection with you, *God seeth me, God seeth me.* To all the wiles of the devil, to all the snares of the world, to all the baits of sin, oppose this reflection, *God seeth me.* If, clothed with a human form, he were always in your path, were he to follow you to every place, were he always before you with his majestic face, with eyes flashing with lightning, with looks inspiring terror, dare ye before his august presence give a loose to your passions? But you have been hearing that his majestic face is every where, those sparkling eyes do inspect you in every place, those terrible looks do consider you every where. Particularly, in the ensuing week, while you are preparing for the Lord's supper, recollect this. Let each examine his own heart, and endeavour to search into his conscience, where he may discover so much weakness, so much corruption, so much hardness, so many unclean sources overflowing with so many excesses, and let this idea strike each of you, *God seeth me.* God seeth me, as I see myself, unclean, ungrateful, and rebellious. O may this idea produce contrition and sorrow, a just remorse and a sound conversion, a holy and a fervent communion, crowned with graces and virtues. Happy, if, after our examination, we have a new heart! a heart agreeable to those eyes that search and try it! Happy, if, after our communion, after a new examination, we can say with the prophet, *O Lord, thou hast proved mine heart, thou hast tried me, and hast found nothing,* Psal. xviii. 3. So be it. To God be honour and glory for ever. Amen.



---

## SERMON II.

---

### THE MANNER OF PRAISING GOD.

Preached after the administration of the Lord's Supper.

PSALM xxxiii. 1.

*Praise is comely for the uprights.*

**T**HERE is something very noble, my brethren, in the end for which we are now assembled in the presence of God. His providence hath infinitely diversified the conditions of those who compose this assembly. Some are placed in the most eminent, others in the most obscure posts of society. Some live in splendor and opulence, others in meanness and indigence. One is employed in the turbulence of the army, another in the silence of the study. Notwithstanding this infinite variety of employments, ranks, and ages, we all assemble to-day in one place; one object occupies us; one sentiment animates us; one voice makes the church resound, *Praise ye the Lord, for his mercy endureth for ever, Plaf. cxxxvi. 1.* If there be an object, that can give a mortal any ideas of the first impressions, which are made on a soul, at its first entering the glorious palace of the blessed God in heaven, it is this. The first objects, that strike such a soul, are multitudes of all nations, tongues, and people, concentrated in a meditation on the beneficence of God, prostrating themselves before his throne, casting their crowns at his feet, and crying out of the abundance of their hearts, which contemplate the perfections of a Being worthy of their profoundest praise, *Amen, Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power,*

## 48 The Manner of praising God.

power, and might, be unto our God, for ever and ever, Amen, Rev. vii. 12. "We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned," chap. xi. 17. "Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints!" chap. xv. 3. "Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever, Amen," chap. i. 5. 6. This is the employment of the blessed in heaven: this is what we are doing to-day on earth.

But what a contradiction, what a contrast appears, when, lifting up the exterior habit of piety, that covers some of us, we examine the inward dispositions of the heart. The psalms, which are uttered with the voice, are contradicted by the tempers of the heart. The mouths, that were just now opened to bless the Creator, will presently be opened again to blaspheme and to curse him. The praises, which seemed so proper to please him in whose honour they were offered, will incur this reproof; *Thou wicked man! What hast thou to do to take my covenant in thy mouth?* Psal. l. 16.

My brethren, if we would join our voices with those of angels, we must have the sentiments of angels. We must, (at least as far as the duty is imitable by such frail creatures) we must, in order to worship God, as those happy spirits praise him, love him as they do, serve him as they do, devote ourselves to him as they devote themselves to him; and this is the manner of praising God, to which I exhort, and in which I would endeavour to instruct you to-day, agreeably to the prophet's exalted notion of it in the words of the text. What day can be more proper to inspire such a noble design? What day can be more proper to engage

engage you to mix your worship with that of glorified intelligences, than this, on which we are come unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of angels, and to the first-born which are written in heaven? Heb. xii. 22, 23.

But, who are we, to be admitted into a society so holy? Great God! Thou dost appear to us to-day, as thou didst formerly to thy prophet, sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and thy train filling the temple, Isa. vi. 1. Around thee stand the seraphims, covering themselves with their wings in thy majestic presence, and crying one to another, *Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of hosts, the whole earth is full of his glory*, ver. 3. We are stricken, as thy prophet was, with such a tremendous vision, and each of us cries with him, *Woe is me! I am undone! I am a man of unclean lips!* and yet, *mine eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts*, ver. 5. O great God! command one of thy seraphims to fly to us, as he flew to him; bid him touch our mouths, as he touched his, with a live coal taken from off the altar, ver. 6. and, in this day of grace and mercy, let him say to each of us, *Lo, this bath touched thy lips, and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged! Amen*, ver. 7.

“Praise is comely for the upright.” The praising of God is a duty, of which we may form two different notions, a *general* and a *particular* notion. By a *general* notion of praise, I mean, the exercise of a man, who, being capable of examining sublime objects, and of comprehending grand subjects, fixeth his attention on the attributes of God, feels the force of those proofs which establish the truth of them, is delighted with them to a certain degree, and is happy in publishing their praise. I mean, by a *particular* notion of praising God, the exercise of a man,

who, having received some signal favour of God, loves to express his gratitude for it.

Each of these exercises of praise supposeth *reflections* and *sentiments*. To praise God in the first sense, to reflect on his attributes, to converse, and to write about them, without having the heart affected, and without loving a Being, who is described as supremely amiable, is a lifeless praise, more fit for a worldly philosopher than for a rational christian. To praise God in the second sense, to be affected with the favours of God, without having any distinct notions of God, without knowing whether the descriptions of the perfections, that are attributed to him, be flights of fancy or real truths, is an exercise more fit for a bigot, who believes without knowing why, than for a *spiritual man, who judgeth all things*, 1 Cor. ii. 15. If we distinguish the part, which these two faculties, reflection and sentiment, take in these two exercises of praise, we may observe that the first, I mean the praise of God taken in a general sense, is the fruit of *reflection*, and the second of *sentiment*. The first is, if I may be allowed to speak so, the praise of the mind; the second is the praise of the heart.

It is difficult to determine which of these two motions prevails in the text, whether the psalmist use the word *praise* in the first or in the second sense. If we judge by the whole subject of the psalm, both are included. The praise of the heart is easily discovered. Whether the author of the psalm were Hezekiah, as many of the fathers thought, who say, this prince composed it after the miraculous defeat of Sennacherib; or whether, which is most likely, David were the composer of it, after one of those preternatural deliverances, with which his life was so often signalized; what I call the praise of the heart, that is, a lively sense of some inestimable blessing, is clearly to be seen. On the other hand, it is still clearer,



clearer, that the sacred author doth not celebrate only one particular object in the psalm. He gives a greater scope to his meditation, and compriseth in it all the works, and all the perfections of God.

Although the solemnity of this day calls us less to the praise of the mind, than to that of the heart; although we intend to make the latter the principal subject of this discourse; yet it is necessary to attend a little to the former.

I. *The praise of the Lord*, taking the word praise in the vague sense, that we have affixed to the term, *is comely for the upright*: and it is comely for none but for them.

“Praise is comely for the upright.” Nothing is more worthy of the attention of an intelligent being, particularly, nothing is more worthy of the imitation of a superior genius, than the wonderful perfections of the Creator. A man of superior genius is required, indeed, to use his talents to cultivate the sciences and the liberal arts; but after all, the mind of man, especially of that man to whom God hath given superior talents, which assimilate him to celestial intelligences, was not created to unravel a point in chronology, to learn the various sounds by which different nations signify their ideas, to measure a line, or to lose itself in an algebraic calculation; the mind of such a man was not created to study the stars, to count their number, to measure their magnitude, to discover more than have yet been observed. Nobler objects ought to occupy him. It becomes such a man to contemplate God, to guide the rest of mankind, to lead them to God, who *dwelleth in the light, which no man can approach unto*, 1. Tim. vi. 16. and to teach us to attenuate the clouds, that hide him from our feeble eyes. It becomes such a man to use that superiority, which his knowledge gives him over us, to elevate our hearts above the low region of terrestrial things,

## 52 The Manner of praising God.

things, where they grovel with the brute beasts, and to help us to place them on the bright abode of the immortal God. The *praise* of the Lord is *comely for upright men*.

But praise is *comely only for upright men*. I believe it is needless now to explain the word *uprightness*. The term is taken in the text in the noblest sense: this is a sufficient explication, and this is sufficient also to convince us that the praising of God is comely for none but upright men. I cannot see, without indignation, a philosopher trifle with the important questions that relate to the attributes of God, and make them simple exercises of genius, in which the heart hath no concern, examining whether there be a God, with the same indifference with which he inquires whether there be a vacuum in nature, or whether matter be infinitely divisible. On determining the questions which relate to the divine attributes, depend our hopes and fears, the plans we must form, and the course of life we ought to pursue; and with these views we should examine the perfections of God; these are consequences that should follow our inquiries. With such dispositions the psalmist celebrated the praises of God, in the psalm out of which we have taken the text. How comely are the praises of God in the mouth of such a man!

Let us follow the holy man a moment in his meditation. His psalm is not composed in scholastic form, in which the author confines himself to fixed rules, and scrupulously following a philosophical method, lays down principles, and infers consequences. However, he establisheth principles the most proper to give us sublime ideas of the Creator; and he speaks with more precision of the works and attributes of God, than the greatest philosophers have spoken them.

How absurdly have philosophers treated of the origin of the world? How few of them have reasoned

reasoned conclusively on this important subject? Our prophet solves the important question by one single principle, and what is more remarkable, this principle, which is nobly expressed, carries the clearest evidence with it. The principle is this:—*By the word of the Lord were the heavens made, and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth.* This is the most rational account that was ever given of the creation of the world. The world is the work of a self-efficient will, and it is this principle alone that can account for its creation. The most simple appearances in nature are sufficient to lead us to this principle. Either my will is self-efficient, or there is some other being whose will is self-efficient.

What I say of myself I say of my parents, and what I affirm of my parents I affirm of my more remote ancestors, and of all the finite creatures from whom they derived their existence. Most certainly, either finite beings have self-efficient wills, which it is impossible to suppose, for a finite creature with a self-efficient will is a contradiction; either, I say, a finite creature hath a self-efficient will, or there is a first cause who hath a self-efficient will; and that there is such a being, is the principle of the psalmist: *By the word of the Lord were the heavens made, and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth.*

If philosophers have reasoned inconclusively on the origin of the world, they have spoken of its government with equal uncertainty. The psalmist determines this question with great facility, by a single principle, which results from the former, and which, like the former, carries its evidence with it. "The Lord looketh from heaven: he considereth all the works of all the inhabitants of the earth," ver. 13, 14. This is the doctrine of Providence. And on what is the doctrine of Providence founded? On this principle: *God fashioneth their hearts alike,* ver. 15.

Attend

## 54 *The Manner of praising God.*

Attend a moment to the evidence of this reasoning, my brethren. The doctrine of Providence, expressed in these words, *God considereth the works of the inhabitants of the earth*, is a necessary consequence of this principle, *God fashioneth their hearts alike*; and this principle is a necessary consequence of that which the psalmist had before laid down to account for the origin of the world. Yes! from the doctrine of God the Creator of men, follows that of God the Inspector, the director, the rewarder, and the punisher of their actions. One of the most specious objections, that hath ever been opposed to the doctrine of Providence, is a contrast between the grandeur of God and the meanness of men. How can such an insignificant creature as man, be an object of the care and attention of such a magnificent Being as God? No objection can be more specious, or, in appearance, more invincible. The distance between the meanest insect and the mightiest monarch, who treads and crushes reptiles to death without the least regard to them, is a very imperfect image of the distance between God and man. That which proves that it would be beneath the dignity of a monarch to observe the motions of ants, or worms, to interest himself in their actions, to punish, or to reward them, seems to demonstrate, that God would degrade himself were he to observe, to direct, to punish, to reward mankind, who are infinitely inferior to him. But, one fact is sufficient to answer this specious objection: That is, that God hath created mankind. Doth God degrade himself more by governing than by creating mankind? Who can persuade himself, that a wise Being hath given to intelligent creatures faculties capable of obtaining knowledge and virtue, without willing that they should endeavour to acquire knowledge and virtue? Or who can imagine, that a wise Being, who willeth that his intelligent creatures should

should acquire knowledge and virtue, will not punish them, if they neglect those acquisitions; and will not shew, by the distribution of his benefits, that he approves their endeavours to obtain them?

Unenlightened philosophers have treated of the attributes of God with as much abstruseness as they have written of his works. The *moral attributes* of God, as they are called in the schools, were mysteries which they could not unfold. These may be reduced to two classes, attributes of *goodness* and attributes of *justice*. Philosophers, who have admitted these, have usually taken that for granted which they ought to have proved. They collected together in their minds all perfections, they reduced them all to one object, which they denominated a *perfect Being*; and supposing, without proving, that a perfect Being existed, they attributed to him, without proof, every thing that they considered as a perfection. The psalmist shews, by a surer way, that there is a God supremely just, and supremely good. It is necessary, in order to convince a rational being of the justice and goodness of God, to follow such a method as that which we follow to prove his existence. When we would prove the existence of God, we say, there are creatures; therefore, there is a Creator. In like manner, when we would prove, that the Creator is a just and a good Being, we say, there are qualities of goodness and justice in creatures; therefore, he, from whom these creatures derive their existence, is a Being just and good. Now this is the reasoning of the psalmist, in this psalm: *The Lord loveth righteousness and judgment, the earth is full of the goodness of the Lord*, ver. 5. that is to say, it is impossible to consider the works of the Creator, without receiving evidence of his goodness. All the works of nature, which demonstrate the goodness of God, prove his justice also;

also; for God hath created us with such dispositions, that we cannot enjoy the gifts of his goodness without obeying the laws of his righteousness. The happiness of an individual, who procures a pleasure by disobeying the laws of equity, is a violent happiness, which cannot be of long duration; and the prosperity of public bodies, when it is founded in iniquity, is an edifice, which with its bases will be presently sunk and gone.

But what we would particularly remark is, that the excellent principles of the psalmist, concerning God, are not mere speculations, but truths from which he derives practical inferences; and he aims to extend their influence beyond private persons, even to legislators and conquerors. One would think, considering the conduct of mankind, that the consequences, which are drawn from the doctrines of which we have been speaking, belong to none but to the dregs of the people; that law-givers and conquerors have a plan of morality peculiar to themselves, and are above the rules to which other men must submit. Our prophet had other notions. What are his maxims of policy? They are all included in these words: *Blessed is the nation whose God is the Lord, and the people whom he hath chosen for his own inheritance*, ver. 12. What are his military maxims? They are all included in these words: *There is no king saved by the multitude of an host: a mighty man is not delivered by much strength: An horse is a vain thing for safety; neither shall he deliver any by his great strength*, ver. 16, 17. Who proposeth these maxims? A hermit, who never appeared on the theatre of the world? or a man destitute of the talents necessary to shine there? No: one of the wisest of kings; one of the most bold and able generals; a man, whom God himself elected to govern his chosen people, and to command those

these armies, which fought the most obstinate battles, and gained the most complete victories. Were I to proceed in explaining the system of the psalmist, I might prove, that as he had a right to infer the doctrine of Providence from the works of nature, and that of the moral attributes of God from the works of creation; so, from the doctrines of the moral attributes of God, of Providence, and of the works of creation, he had a right to conclude, that no conquerors or law-givers could be truly happy, but those who acted agreeably to the laws of the just and good Supreme. But I shall not enlarge on this article.

Permit me only to place in one point of view the different phrases, by which the psalmist describes the Deity in this psalm. "The earth is full of the goodness of the Lord. By the word of the Lord were the heavens made, and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth. He gathereth the waters of the sea together, as an heap: he layeth up the depth in storehouses. The Lord looketh from heaven: he beholdeth all the sons of men. From the place of his habitation he looketh upon all the inhabitants of the earth. He fashioneth their hearts alike; he considereth all their works," ver. 5—7, 12—15.

From these speculative ideas of God, he derives the following rules of practice. "Let all the earth fear the Lord: let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of him. Our soul waiteth for the Lord: he is our help and our shield. For our heart shall rejoice in him, because we have trusted in his holy name. Let thy mercy, O Lord, be upon us according as we hope in thee," ver. 8, 20—22. How delightful it is, my brethren, to speak of God, when one hath talents to speak of him in such a noble manner, and when one intends to promote the fear and the love of him, with an universal obedience to him, from all that is said! How well it becomes

F

such

58 *The Manner of praising God.*

such a man to praise God! The *praise* of the Lord is *comely* in the mouths of *upright* men.

II. Let us now apply the subject more immediately to the service of this day. To *praise God* is a phrase, which is sometimes taken, in a particular sense, for the exercise of a person, who, having received singular favours of God, delights in-expressing his gratitude to him. This *praise is comely* in the mouth of an *upright* man, for four reasons.

First. Because he arrangerth them in their true order, highly estimating what deserves a high esteem, and most highly estimating what deserves the highest esteem.

Secondly. Because he employs all his benefits in the service of his benefactor.

Thirdly. Because, while he recounts his blessings, he divests himself of all merit, and ascribes them only to the goodness of God from whom they proceed.

Fourthly. Because he imitates that goodness and love, which inclined God to bless him in such a manner.

I will affix to each of these reflections a single word. *Praise*, or if you will, *gratitude*, is *comely for the upright*, because it is *wise, real, humble, and magnanimous*: In these four respects, *praise is comely for the upright*. These are the sentiments, with which the holy sacrament, of which we have taken this morning, should inspire us. These are the most important reflections, with which we can close this discourse.

1. The gratitude of upright men is *wise*. The praise of the Lord becomes them well, because, while they bless God for all their mercies, they arrange them in their proper order; they prize each according to its real worth, and that most of all which is of the greatest value. It is a very mortifying reflection, my brethren, that the more we study ourselves, the more clearly we perceive, that



that the love of the world, and of sensible things, is the chief springs of all our actions and sentiments. This disagreeable truth is proved, not only by the nature of our vices, but even by the genius of our virtues; not only by the offences we commit against God, but by the very duties we perform in his service.

A person so ungrateful, as not to discover any gratitude to God, when he bestows temporal blessings on him, can scarcely be found. We praise God, when he delivers us from any public calamity, or from any domestic adversity; when he recovers us from dangerous illness; when he raiseth us up an unexpected friend, or a protector, who assists us; when he sends us some prosperity, which renders life more easy. In such cases as these, we render an homage to God, that cannot be refused without ingratitude.

But we are extremely blameable, when, while we feel the value of these blessings, we remain insensible of the worth of other blessings, which are infinitely more valuable, and which merit infinitely more gratitude. A blessing, that directly regards the soul, is more valuable than one which regards only the body. A blessing, that regards our eternal happiness, is of greater worth, than one which influenceth only the happiness of this life. Whence is it then, that, being so sensible of blessings of the first kind, we are so little affected with those of the last? How comes it to pass, that we are so full of gratitude, when God gives the state some signal victory; when he prospers its trade; when he strengthens the bonds, that unite it to powerful and faithful allies; and so void of it, while he continues to grant it the greatest blessing that a society of rational creatures can enjoy, I mean a liberty to serve God according to the dictates of our own consciences? Whence is it, that we are so very thankful to God for preserving our lives from the dangers

dangers that daily threaten them; and so little thankful for his miraculous patience with us, to which it is owing, that, after we have hardened our hearts against his voice one year, he invites us another year; after we have falsified our promises made on one solemnity, he calls us to another solemnity, and giveth us new opportunities of being more faithful to him? Whence comes this difference? Follow it to its source. Does it not proceed from what we just now said? Is not love of the world, and of sensible things, the grand spring of our actions and sentiments? The world, the world; lo! this is the touchstone, by which we judge of good and evil!

An upright man judgeth in another manner: he will, indeed, bless God for all his benefits; but as he knows how to arrange them, so he knows how to prize each according to its worth, and how to apportion his esteem to the real value of them all.

According to such an estimation, what ought not our gratitude to God be to-day, my dear brethren! We may assure ourselves with the utmost truth, that had the Lord united in our houses to-day, pleasures, grandeurs, and dignities; had he promised each of us a life longer than that of a patriarch; a family as happy as that of Job, after his misfortunes; glory as great as that of Solomon; he would have bestowed nothing equal to that blessing, which he gave us this morning. He forgave those sins, which, had they taken their natural course, would have occasioned endless remorse, and would have plunged us into everlasting misery and woe. A peace was shed abroad in our consciences, which gave us a foretaste of heaven. He excited hopes, that absorbed our souls in their grandeur. Let us say all in one word: he gave us his Son. "He that spared not his own Son, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?" Rom. viii. 32.

2<sup>d</sup> The gratitude of upright men is *real*. The praise of the Lord becomes them, because, while they praise God for his benefits, they live to the glory of their benefactor. Every gift of God furnisheth us with both a motive and a mean of obedience to him. It is an excess of ingratitude to make a contrary use of his gifts, and to turn the benefits that we receive, against the benefactor from whom we receive them. What gifts are they, by which God hath most distinguished us? These he hath distinguished by a penetrating genius, which renders the highest objects, the deepest mysteries, accessible to thee. Wo be to thee! if thou employ this gift to invent arguments against the truths of religion, and to find out sophisms that befriend infidelity. An *upright* man devotes this gift to his benefactor; he avails himself of his genius, to discover the folly of sceptical sophisms, and to demonstrate the truth of religion. On thee he hath bestowed an astonishing memory. Wo be to thee! if thou use it to retain the pernicious maxims of the world. An *upright* man dedicates this gift to his benefactor; he employs his memory in retaining the excellent lessons of equity, charity, and patience, which the holy Spirit hath taught him in the scriptures. To thee he hath given an authoritative elocution, to which every hearer is forced to bow. Wo be to thee! if thou apply this rare talent to seduce the minds, and to deprave the hearts, of mankind. An *upright* man devotes this blessing to the service of his benefactor; he useth his eloquence to free the minds of men from error, and their lives from vice. Towards thee God hath exercised a patience, which seems contrary to his usual rules of conduct towards sinners, and by which he hath abounded toward thee in forbearance and long-suffering. Wo be to thee! if thou turn this blessing into an opportunity of violating the commands of God; if

## 62      *The Manner of praising God.*

thyne obstinacy run parallel with his patience, and if, *because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, thy heart be fully set in thee to do evil*, Eccl. viii. 11. An upright man devotes this blessing to his benefactor's service. From the patience of God he derives motives of repentance. How easily might this article be enlarged! how fruitful in instruction would it be on this solemnity! But we proceed.

3. Gratitude to God well becomes an upright man, because it is *humble*; because an upright man, by publishing the gifts of God's grace, divests himself of himself, and attributes them wholly to the goodness of him from whom they came. Far from us be a profane mixture of the real grandeurs of the Creator with the fanciful grandeurs of creatures! Far be those praises, in which he who offers them always finds, in his own excellence, the motives that induced the Lord to bestow his benefits on him!

Two reflections always exalt the gifts of God in the eyes of an upright man; a reflection on his meanness, and a reflection on his unworthiness; and it is with this comeliness of humility, if I may venture to call it so, that I wish to engage you to praise God for the blessings of this day.

1. Meditate on your *meanness*. Contrast yourselves with God, who gives himself to you to-day in such a tender manner. How soon is the capacity of man absorbed in the works and attributes of God! Conceive, if thou be capable, the grandeur of a Being, who *made the heavens by his word, and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth*. Think, if thou be capable of thinking, of the glory of a Being, who existed from all eternity, whose understanding is infinite, whose power is irresistible, whose will is above controul. Behold him filling the whole universe with his presence. Behold him in the palace of his

*The Manner of praising God.* 63

his glory, *inhabiting the praises* of the blessed, Psal. xxii. 3. surrounded by thousand thousands, and by ten thousand times ten thousand angels, who excel in strength, and who delight to fly at the first signal of his will. Thou human soul ! contemplate this object, and recover thy reason. What art thou ? What was thine origin ? What is thine end ? Thou diminutive atom ! great only in thine own eyes ; behold thyself in thy true point of view. Dust ! ashes ! putrefaction ! glorious only at the tribunal of thine own pride ; divest thyself of the tawdry grandeur in which thou lovest to array thyself. Thou vapour ! thou dream ! thou exhalation of the earth ! evaporating in the air, and having no other consistence than what thine own imagination gives thee ; behold thy vanity and nothingness. Yet this dream, this exhalation, this vapour, this dust, and ashes, and putrefaction, this diminutive creature, is an object of the eternal care and love of its God. For thee, contemptible creature ! the Lord stretched out the heavens ; for thee he laid the foundation of the earth. Let us say more : For thee, contemptible creature ! God formed the plan of redemption. What could determine the great Jehovah to communicate himself, in such a tender and intimate manner, to so contemptible a creature as man ? His goodness, his goodness alone.

Although a sense of our meanness should not terrify and confound us, yet it should exclude arrogance, and excite lowly sentiments : But what will our humility be, if we estimate the gifts of God's grace by an idea of our unworthiness ? Let each recollect the mortifying history of his own life. Remember, thou ! thy fiery youth, in which, forgetting all the principles that thy pious parents had taught thee, thou didst acknowledge no law but thine own passionate and capricious will. Remember, thou ! that period, in which  
thy

#### 64 The Manner of praising God!

thy heart being infatuated with one object, and wholly employed about it, thou didst make it thine idol, and didst sacrifice to it thine honour, thy duty, thy God. Recollect, thou! the cruel use, that for many years thou didst make of thy credit, thy riches, thy rank, when, being devour'd with self-love, thou wast insensible to the voice of the widow and the orphan, and to a number of distressed people, who solicited relief. Remember, thou! that fatal hour, the recollection of which ought to make thy *head waters*, and *thine eyes a fountain of tears*, Jeri ix. 1. that fatal hour, in which, God having put thee into the fiery trial of persecution, thou couldst not abide the proof. Like Peter, thou didst *not know* a disgraced Redeemer; thou didst cowardly abandon a persecuted church, and wast just on the point of abjuring thy religion. Let each of us so consider himself as he seems in the eyes of a holy God. A criminal worthy of the most rigorous punishments! Let each of us say to himself, Notwithstanding all this, it is I, guilty I; I, whose sins are more in number than the hairs on my head; it is I, who have been admitted this morning into the house of God; it is I, who have been invited this morning to that mystical repast, which sovereign wisdom itself prepared; it is I, who have been encouraged against the just fears, which the remembrance of my sins had excited, and have heard the voice of God, proclaiming in my conscience, *Fear not, thou worm Jacob*, Isa. xli. 14. It is I, who have been abundantly satisfied with the fatness of the house of God, and have drunk of the river of his pleasures, Psal. xxxvi. 8. What inclines God to indulge me in this manner? Goodness, only! O surpassing and inconceivable goodness! thou shalt for ever be the object of my meditation and gratitude! "How excellent is thy loving kindness, O God!" ver. 7. These are sentiments that ought

ought to animate our praise to-day. Such praise is comely for the upright.

Finally, The gratitude of an upright man is noble and magnanimous. The praise of God well becomes the mouth of an upright man, because he takes the love of God to him for a pattern of his behaviour to his fellow creatures. St. Paul hath very emphatically expressed the happy change which the gospel produceth in true christians. "We all with open face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the spirit of the Lord," 2 Cor. iii. 18. Some commentators, instead of reading *we all beholding as in a glass*, as the expression is rendered in our translation, render the words, *we all becoming mirrors*. I will not undertake to prove that this is the meaning of the term: it is certainly the sense of the apostle.\* He means to inform us, that the impression, which the evangelical display of

\* The idea of reflecting, while one contemplates the attributes of God, is a very fine thought, and fully expressive of the benevolent effects which christianity produceth in its disciples; but Mr. Saurin, whose business as a christian minister was not with the fine, but the true, only meant, by what he said above, that it was agreeable to the general design of the apostle. Erasmus was the first who translated St. Paul's term *katoptrizomenoi in speculo representantes*. Beza renders it, *in speculo intuentes*; and our French bibles have it, *nous contemplons comme en un miroir*. Our author was delighted with the ingenuity of Erasmus; however, he could not accede to his translation, because, 1. He could meet with no Greek author, cotemporary with St. Paul, who had used the term in the sense of Erasmus. 2. Because he could not perceive any connexion between that signification and the phrase *with open face*. He abode therefore by the usual reading. See Sermon, Tom. ix. S. viii. My idea of an object pleases me, therefore it is a true idea of it, is contemptible logic: yet how many pretended articles of religion have arisen from this way of reasoning!

66 *The Manner of praising God.*

of the perfections of God makes on the souls of believers, engraves them on their minds, and renders them like mirrors, that reflect the rays, and the objects which are placed opposite to them, and represent their images. *They behold the glory of the Lord with open face. They are changed from glory to glory into the same image, even as by the spirit of the Lord.* I wish, my brethren, that the impression, which was made on you by the generosity and magnanimity of God, who loaded you this morning with his gracious benefits, may transform you to-day *into the same image from glory to glory.* I would animate you with this, the most noble, the most sublime, the most comfortable, way of praising God.

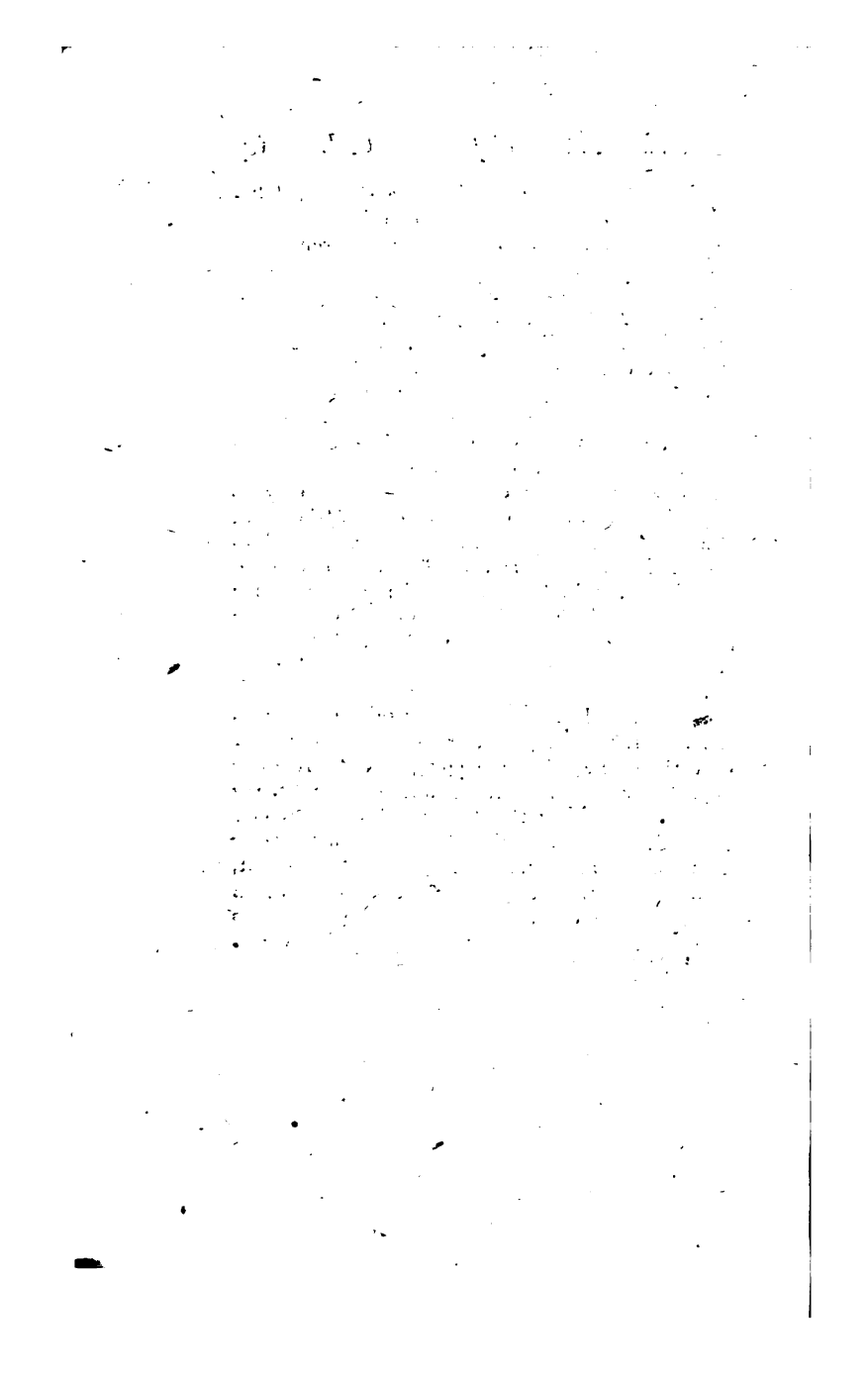
What gave you so much peace and pleasure this morning, in what God did for you? Was it the pardon of your sins? Imitate it; pardon your brethren. Was it his past forbearance with you? Imitate it; moderate that impatience which the ingratitude of your brethren excites in your minds. Was it that spirit of communication, which disposed a God, who is all-sufficient to his own happiness, to go out of himself, as it were, and to communicate his felicity to creatures? Imitate it; go out of those intrenchments of prosperity in which you lodge, and impart your benefits to your brethren. Was it the continual watchfulness of God for the salvation of your souls? Imitate it; exert yourselves for the salvation of the souls of your brethren; suffer not those, who are united to you by all the ties of nature, society, and religion, to perish through your lukewarmness and negligence. While you triumphantly exclaim, on this solemn festival, *Let us make a joyful noise to the Rock of our salvation.* Psal. xcv. 1. remember your persecuted brethren, to whom God refuseth this pleasure; remember *the ways of Zion, that mourn, because none come to the solemn feasts.* Lam. i. My.



## The Manner of praising God. 67

My brethren, how pleasing is a christian festival! How comfortable the institution, to which we were this morning called! But I remember here a saying of Jesus Christ to his apostles, *I have other sheep which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd*, John x. 16. Alas! we also have sheep in another fold. When shall we have the comfort of bringing them into this? Ye divided families! who are present in this assembly, when will you be united? Ye children of the reformation! whom the misfortunes of the times have torn from us; ye dear parts of ourselves! when will you come to us? When will you be re-gathered to the flock of the great shepherd and bishop of our souls? When will ye shed in our assemblies tears of repentance, for having lived so long without a church, without sacraments, without public worship? When will ye shed tears of joy for having recovered these advantages?

Great God! Thou great God who hidest thyself! is it to extinguish, or to enflame our zeal, that thou delayest the happy period? Are our hopes suspended or confounded? God grant, my dear brethren, that the *praise*, which we render to the Lord for all his benefits, may obtain their continuance and increase! And God grant, while he giveth us our *lives for a prey*, Jer. xxi. 9. that those of our brethren may be given us also! To him be honour and glory for ever! Amen.



---

## SERMON III.

---

### THE SOVEREIGNTY OF JESUS CHRIST IN THE CHURCH.

ROMANS xiv. 7, 8.

*None of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. For, whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or, whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore or die, we are the Lord's.*

THESE words are a general maxim, which St. Paul lays down for the decision of a particular controversy. We cannot well enter into the apostle's meaning, unless we understand the particular subject, which led him to express himself in this manner. Our first reflections, therefore, will tend to explain the subject, and afterward we will extend our meditations to greater objects. We will attend to the text in that point of view, in which those christians are most interested, who have repeatedly engaged to devote themselves wholly to Jesus Christ; to consecrate to him through life, and to commit to him at death, not only with submission, but also with joy, those souls, over which he hath acquired the noblest right. Thus shall we verify, in the most pure and elevated of all senses, this saying of the apostle, *None of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. For, whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or, whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore or die, we are the Lord's.*

St. Paul proposed in the text, and in some of the preceding and following verses, to establish the doctrine of toleration. By toleration, we mean, that disposition of a christian, which, on a

## 70 *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

principle of benevolence, inclines him to hold communion with a man, who, through weakness of mind, mixeth with the truths of religion some errors, that are not entirely incompatible with it; and with the new testament worship some ceremonies, which are unsuitable to its elevation and simplicity, but which, however, do not destroy its essence.

Retain every part of this definition, for each is essential to the subject defined. I say, that he, who exerciseth toleration, acts on a principle of benevolence; for were he to act on a principle of indolence, or of contempt for religion, his disposition of mind, far from being a virtue worthy of praise, would be a vice fit only for execration. Toleration, I say, is to be exercised towards him only, who errs through *weakness of mind*; for he, who persists in his error through arrogance, and for the sake of rending the church, deserves rigorous punishment. I say, further, that he, who exerciseth toleration, doth not confine himself to praying for him, who is the object of it, and to endeavouring to reclaim him; he proceeds farther, and *holds communion with him*; that is to say, he assists at the same religious exercises, and partakes of the Lord's supper at the same table. Without this communion, can we consider him, whom we pretend to tolerate, as a brother in the sense of St. Paul? I add, finally, *erroneous sentiments*, which are tolerated, *must be compatible with the great truths of religion; and observances*, which are tolerated, *must not destroy the essence of evangelical worship*, although they are incongruous with its simplicity and glory. How can I assist in a service, which, in my opinion, is an insult on the God whom I adore? How can I approach the table of the Lord with a man, who rejects all the mysteries, which God exhibits there? and so of the rest.

Retain,

Retain, then, all the parts of this definition, and you will form a just notion of *toleration*.

This moderation, always necessary among christians, was particularly so in the primitive ages of christianity. The first churches were composed of two sorts of profelytes; some of them were born of Jewish parents, and had been educated in Judaism, others were converted from paganism; and both, generally speaking, after they had embraced christianity, preserved some traces of the religions which they had renounced. Some of them retained scruples, from which just notions of christian liberty, it should seem, might have freed them. They durst not eat some foods which God gave for the nourishment of mankind, I mean, the flesh of animals, and they ate only *berbs*. They set apart certain *days* for devotional exercises: not from that wise motive, which ought to engage every rational man to take a portion of his life from the tumult of the world, in order to consecrate it to the service of his Creator; but from I know not what notion of pre-eminence, which they attributed to some days above others. Thus far all are agreed in regard to the design of St. Paul in the text.

Nor is there any difficulty in determining which of the two orders of christians, of whom we spoke, St. Paul considers as an object of toleration; whether that class which came from the Gentiles, or that which came from the Jews. It is plain the last is intended. Every body knows that the law of Moses ordained a great number of feasts under the penalty of the great anathema. It was very natural for the converted Jews to retain a fear of incurring that penalty, which followed the infraction of those laws, and to carry their veneration for those festivals too far.

There was one whole sect among the Jews, that abstained entirely from the flesh of animals; they

## 70 The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ

they were the *Essenes*. Josephus expressly affirms this; and Philo assures us, that their tables were free from every thing that had blood, and were served with only bread, salt, and hyssop. As the *Essenes* professed a severity of manners, which had some likeness to the morality of Jesus Christ, it is probable, many of them embraced christianity, and in it interwove a part of the peculiarities of their own sect.

I do not think, however, that St. Paul had any particular view to the *Essenes*; at least, we are not obliged to suppose, that his views were confined to them. All the world know, that Jews have an aversion to blood. A Jew, exact in his religion, does not eat flesh now-a-days with christians, lest the latter should not have taken sufficient care to discharge the blood. When, therefore, St. Paul describes converted Jews by their scrupulosity in regard to the eating of blood, he does not speak of what they did in their own families, but of what they practised, when they were invited to a convivial repast with people, who thought themselves free from the prohibition of eating blood, whether they were Gentiles yet involved in the darkness of paganism, or Gentile converts to christianity. Thus far our subject is free from difficulty.

The difficulty lies in the connexion of the maxim in the text with the end, which St. Paul proposeth in establishing it. What relation is there between christian toleration and this maxim, *None of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself?* How doth it follow from this principle, *whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or, whether we die, we die unto the Lord;* how doth it follow from this principle, that we ought to tolerate those, who, through the weakness of their minds, mix some errors with the grand truths of christianity, and with the new testament worship some ceremonies, which obscure its simplicity, and debase its glory? The

The solution lies in the connexion of the text with the foregoing verses, and particularly with the fourth verse, *who art thou, that judgest another man's servant?* To judge, in this place, does not signify to discern, but to condemn. The word has this meaning in a hundred passages of the new testament. I confine myself to one passage for example. "If we judge ourselves, we should not be judged," 1 Cor. xi. 31. that is to say, if we would condemn ourselves at the tribunal of repentance, after we have partaken unworthily of the Lord's supper; we should not be condemned at the tribunal of divine justice. In like manner, *who art thou, that judgest another man's servant?* is as much as to say, *who art thou that condemnest?* St. Paul meant to make the christians of Rome understand, that it belonged only to the sovereign of the church to absolve or to condemn; as he saw fit.

But who is the supreme head of the church? Jesus Christ, Jesus Christ, who, with his Father, is *over all; God blessed for ever;* Rom. ix. 5. Jesus Christ, by dying for the church, acquired this supremacy; and in virtue of it all true christians render him the homage of adoration. All this is clearly expressed by our apostle, and gives us an occasion to treat of one of the most abstruse points of christian theology.

That Jesus Christ is the supreme head of the church; according to the doctrine of St. Paul, is expressed by the apostle in the most clear and explicit manner; for after he hath said, in the words of the text, *whether we live, or die, we are the Lord's;* he adds immediately, *for to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.*

That this Jesus, whose, the apostle says, we are, is God, the apostle does not permit us to doubt; for he confounds the expressions *to eat to the Lord,* and *to give God thanks;* to stand be-

## 74 *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

from the judgment; seat of Christ, and to give account of himself to God; to be Lord both of the dead and living, ver. 6, 10, 12. and this majestic language, which would be blasphemy in the mouth of a simple creature, *As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God, ver. 11.*

Finally, That Jesus Christ acquired that supremacy by his sufferings and death, in virtue of which all true christians render him the homage of adoration, the apostle establisheth, if possible, still more clearly. This appears by the words just now cited, *to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living, ver. 8, 11.* To the same purpose the apostle speaks in the epistle to the Philippians, "He became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God hath also highly exalted him, and given him a name, which is above every name; that at the name of Jesus every knee shall bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; and that every tongue shall confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father." This is the sovereignty which Jesus Christ acquired by dying for the church.

But the most remarkable, and at the same time the most difficult article on this subject, is this. These texts, which seem to establish the divinity of Christ in a manner so clear, furnish the greatest objection, that hath ever been proposed against it. True, say the enemies of this doctrine, Jesus Christ is God, since the scripture commands us to worship him. But his divinity is an acquired divinity; since that supremacy, which entitles him to adoration as God, is not an essential, but an acquired supremacy. Now, that this supremacy is acquired, is indubitable, since the texts, that have been cited, expressly declare, that it is a fruit of his sufferings and death. We have two arguments to offer in reply.

1. If



1. If it were demonstrated, that the supremacy established in the forecited texts was only acquired, and not essential; it would not therefore follow, that Jesus Christ had no other supremacy belonging to him in common with the Father and the holy Spirit. We are commanded to worship Jesus Christ, not only because he died for us, but also because he is eternal and almighty, the author of all beings that exist; and because he hath all the perfections of Deity, as we can prove by other passages, not necessary to be repeated here.

2. Nothing hinders that the true God, who, as the true God, merits our adoration, should acquire every day new rights over us, in virtue of which we have new motives of rendering those homages to him, which we acknowledge he always infinitely merited. Always when God bestows a new blessing, he acquireth a new right. What was Jacob's opinion, when he made this vow? "If God will be with me, and will keep me in the way that I go, and will give me bread to eat; and raiment to put on; so that I come again to my father's house in peace; then shall the Lord be my God;" Gen. xxviii. 20, &c. Did the patriarch mean, that he had no other reason for regarding the Lord as his God, than this favour, which he asked of him? No such thing. He meant, that to a great many reasons, which bound him to devote himself to God, the favour which he asked would add a new one. It would be easy to produce a long list of examples of this kind. At present the application of this one should suffice. Jesus Christ, who, as supreme God, hath natural rights over us, hath also acquired rights, because he hath deigned to clothe himself with our flesh, in which he died to redeem us. *None of us is his own*, we are all his, not only because he is our Creator, but because he is also our Redeemer. He hath a supremacy over us peculiar to himself, and distinct from that, which

## 76 The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ

which he hath in common with the Father and the holy Spirit.

To return then to our principal subject, from which this long digression hath diverted us. This Jesus, who is the supreme head of the church; this Jesus, to whom all the members of the church are subject; willeth that we should tolerate, and he himself hath tolerated, those, who, having in other cases an upright conscience, and a sincere intention of submitting their reason to all his decisions, and their hearts to all his commands, cannot clearly see, that christian liberty includes a freedom from the observation of certain feasts, and from the distinction of certain foods. If the sovereign of the church tolerate them, who are in this manner, by what right do you, who are only simple subjects, undertake to condemn them? "Who art thou, that judgest another man's servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore or die, we are the Lord's. Let us not therefore judge one another any more." Let us, *who are strong, bear the infirmities of the weak.*

This is the design of St. Paul, in the words of my text; in some of the preceding, and in some of the following verses. Can we proceed without remarking, or without lamenting, the blindness of those christians, who, by their intolerance to their brethren, seem to have chosen for their model those members of the church of Rome, who violate the rights of toleration in the most cruel manner? We are not speaking of those sanguinary men, who aim at illuminating people's minds with the light of fires, and faggots, which they kindle against all, who reject their systems. Our tears, and our blood, have not assuaged their rage;

rage; how can we then think to appease it by our exhortations? Let us not solicit the wrath of heaven against these persecutors of the church; let us leave to the souls of them, who were slain for the word of God, to cry, *How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them, that dwell on the earth?* Rev. vi. 10.

But ye intestine divisions! Thou spirit of faction! Ye theological wars! how long will ye let loose among us? Is it possible, that christians, who bear the name of reformed, christians, united by the bond of their faith in the belief of the same doctrines, and, if I may be allowed to speak so, christians united by the very efforts of their enemies to destroy them; can they violate, after all, those laws of toleration, which they have so often prescribed to others, and against the violation of which they have remonstrated with so much wisdom and success? Can they convoke ecclesiastical assemblies, can they draw up canons, can they denounce excommunications and anathemas against those, who, retaining with themselves the leading truths of christianity and of the reformation, think differently on points of simple speculation, on questions purely metaphysical, and, if I may speak the whole, on matters so abstruse, that they are alike indeterminable by them, who exclude members from the communion of Jesus Christ; and by those who are excluded? O ye sons of the reformation! how long will you counteract your own principles! how long will you take pleasure in increasing the number of those, who breathe only your destruction, and move only to destroy you! O ye subjects of the sovereign of the church! how long will you encroach on the rights of your sovereign, dare to condemn those whom he absolves, and to reject those whom his generous benevolence tolerates! "Who art thou, that judgest another man's servant?"

## 80 *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

which are unknown, would probably make larger volumes yet.

Our life is not ours. Winds, waves, heat, cold, aliments, vegetables, animals, nature, and each of its component parts, conspire to deprive us of it. Not one of those, who have entered this church, can demonstrate that he shall go out of it alive. Not one of those, who compose this assembly, even of the youngest and strongest, can assure himself of one year, one day, one hour, one moment of life. *None of us liveth to himself; for, if we live, we are the Lord's.*

Further, *No man dieth to himself. If we die, we are the Lord's.* How absolute forever the dominion of one man over another may be, there is a moment, in which both are on a level; that moment comes when we die. Death delivers a slave from the power of a tyrant, under whose rigour he hath spent his life in groans. Death terminates all the relations, that subsist between men in this life. But the relation of dependence, which subsists between the Greater and his creatures, is an eternal relation. That world, into which we enter when we die, is a part of his empire, and is as subject to his laws as that into which we entered when we were born. During this life, the Supreme Governor hath riches and poverty; glory and ignominy, erect tyrants and clement princes, rains and droughts, raging tempests and refreshing breezes, air wholesome and air infected, famine and plenty, victories and defeats, to render us happy or miserable. After death, he hath absolution and condemnation, a tribunal of justice and a tribunal of mercy, angels and devils, a river of pleasure and a lake burning with fire and brimstone, hell with its horrors and heaven with its happiness, to render us happy or miserable as he pleaseth.

These reflections are not quite sufficient to make us feel all our dependence. Our vanity is mortified,

mortified, when we remember, that what we enjoy is not ours; but it is sometimes, as it were, indemnified by observing the great means, that God employs to deprive us of our enjoyments. God hath, in general, excluded this extravagant motive to pride. He hath attached our felicity to one fibre, to one caprice, to one grain of sand, to objects the least likely, and seemingly the least capable, of influencing our destiny.

On what is your high idea of yourself founded? On your genius? And what is necessary to reduce the finest genius to that state of melancholy or madness, of which I just now spoke? Must the earth quake? Must the sea overflow its banks? Must the heavens kindle into lightning and resound in thunder? Must the elements clash, and the powers of nature be shaken? No; there needs nothing but the displacing of one little fibre in your brain!

On what is your high idea of yourself founded? On that self-complacence, which fortune, rank, and pleasing objects, that surround you, seem to contribute to excite? And what is necessary to dissipate your self-complacence? Must the earth tremble? Must the sea overflow its banks? Must heaven arm itself with thunder and lightning? Must all nature be shaken? No; one caprice is sufficient. An appearance, under which an object presents itself to us, or rather, a colour, that our imagination lends it, banisheth self-complacence, and, lo! the man just now agitated with so much joy, is fixed in a black, a deep despair!

On what is your lofty idea of yourself founded? On your health? But what is necessary to deprive you of your health? Earthquakes? Armies? Inundations? Must nature return to its chaotic state? No; one grain of sand is sufficient! That grain of sand, which in another position was next to nothing to you, and was re-

## 82 *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

ally nothing to your felicity, becomes in its present position a punishment, a martyrdom, a hell!

People sometimes speculate the nature of those torments, which divine justice reserves for the wicked. They are less concerned to avoid the pains of hell, than to discover wherein they consist. They ask, what fuel can supply a fire, that will never be extinguished. Vain researches! The principle in my text is sufficient to give me frightful ideas of hell. We are in a state of entire *dependence* on the Supreme Being; and to repeat it again, one single grain of sand, which is nothing in itself, may become in the hands of the Supreme Being, a punishment, a martyrdom, a hell in regard to us. What *dependence*? *Whether we live, or whether we die, we are the Lord's.* This is the primitive condition of a christian.

II. Our text points out the *engagements* of a christian. Let us abridge our reflections. Remark the state in which Jesus Christ found us; what he performed to deliver us from it; and under what conditions we enter on and enjoy this deliverance.

1. In what *state* did Jesus Christ find us, when he came into our world? I am sorry to say, the affected delicacy of the world, which increaseth as its irregularities multiply, obligeth me to suppress part of a metaphorical description, that the holy Spirit hath given us in the sixteenth chapter of Ezekiel. "Thy father was an Amorite, and thy mother an Hittite," saith he to the church. "When thou wast born, no eye pitied thee, to do any thing unto thee; but thou wast cast out in the open air, to the loathing of thy person, in the day that thou wast born. I passed by thee, and saw thee polluted in thine own blood, and I said unto thee, when thou wast in thy blood, Live. I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness; yea, I swear unto thee,

thee; and entered into a covenant with thee, and thou becamest mine," ver. 3; &c.

Let us leave the metaphor, and let us confine our attention to the meaning. When Jesus Christ came into the world, in what state did he find us? Descended from a long train of ancestors in rebellion against the laws of God, fluctuating in our ideas, ignorant of our origin and end, blinded by our prejudices, infatuated by our passions, *having no hope, and being without God in the world*, Eph. ii. 12. condemned to die, and reserved for eternal flames. From this state Jesus Christ delivered us, and brought us into *the glorious liberty of the sons of God*, Rom. viii. 21. in order to enable us to participate the felicity of the blessed God, by making us *partakers of the divine nature*, 2 Pet. i. 4. By a deliverance so glorious, doth not the deliverer obtain peculiar rights over us?

Remark, further, on what *conditions* Jesus Christ hath freed you from your miseries, and you will perceive, that *ye are not your own*. What means the morality that Jesus Christ enjoined in his gospel? What vows were made for each of you at your baptism? What hast thou promised at the Lord's table? In one word, to what authority didst thou submit by embracing the gospel? Didst thou say to Jesus Christ, Lord! I will be partly thine, and partly mine own? To thee I will submit the opinions of my mind; but the irregular dispositions of my heart I will reserve to myself. I will consent to renounce my vengeance; but thou shalt allow me to retain my Dalilah and my Drusilla. For thee I will quit the world and dissipating pleasures; but thou shalt indulge the visionary and capricious flow of my humour. Oh a christian festival I will rise into transports of devotion; my countenance shall emit rays of a divine flame; my eyes shall sparkle with seraphic fire, *my heart and my flesh shall*

## 84. *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

*shall cry out for the living God, Pſal. lxxxiv. 24* but when I return to the world, I will sink into the spirit of the men of it; I will adopt their maxims, share their pleasures, immerse myself in their conversation; and thus I will be alternately, *cold and hot, Rev. iii. 15.* a christian and a heathen, an angel and a devil. Is this your idea of christianity? Undoubtedly it is that, which many of our hearers have formed; and which they take too much pains to prove, by the whole course of their conversation. But this is not the idea which the inspired writers have given us of christianity; it is not that, which, after their example, we have given you. Him only I acknowledge for a true christian, who is *not his own*, at least, who continually endeavours to eradicate the remains of sin, that resist the empire of Jesus Christ. Him alone I acknowledge for a true christian, who can say with St. Paul, although not in the same degree, yet with equal sincerity, *I am crucified with Christ; nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life, which I now live, in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me, Gal. ii. 20.*

Consider, thirdly, what it cost Jesus Christ to deliver you from your wretched state. Could our freedom have been procured by a few emotions of benevolence, or by an act of supreme power? In order to deliver us from our griefs, it was necessary for him to bear them; to terminate our sorrows, he must carry them; (according to the language of a prophet) to deliver us from the strokes of divine justice, he must be *stricken and smitten of God, Isa. liii. 4.* I am aware, that one of the most deplorable infirmities of the human mind, is to become insensible to the most affecting objects by becoming familiar with them. The glorified saints, we know, by contemplating the sufferings of the Saviour of



the world, behold objects, that excite eternal adorations of the mercy of *him, who loved them, and washed them from their sins in his own blood, and made them kings, and priests unto God his Father*, Rev. i. 5, 6. but in our present state, the proposing of these objects to us in a course of sermons is sufficient to weary us. However, I affirm, that, if we have not been affected with what Christ hath done for our salvation, it hath not been owing to our thinking too much, but to our not thinking enough, and perhaps to our never having thought of the subject once, with such a profound attention as its interesting nature demands.

Bow thyself towards the mystical ark, christian! and fix thine eyes on the mercy-seat. Revolve in thy meditation the astonishing, I had almost said, the incredible history of thy Saviour's love. Go to Bethlehem, and behold him, *who upholdeth all things by the word of his power*, (I use the language of an apostle) him, who thought it no usurpation of the rights of the Deity to be *equal with God*; behold him *humbling himself*, (I use here the words of St. Paul, Heb. i. 3. Phil. ii. 6: his words are more emphatical still.) Behold him *annihilated*\*; for, although the child, who was born in a stable, and laid in a manger, was a real being, yet he may seem to be *annihilated* in regard to the degrading circumstances, which veiled and concealed his natural dignity; behold him *annihilated*, by *taking upon him the form of a servant*: Follow him through the whole course of his life; *be went about doing good*, Acts x. 38. and exposed himself in every place to inconveniences and miseries, through the abundance of his benevolence and love. Pass to Gethsemane; behold his agony; see him as

H 2

the

\* Videtur hic alludere ad Dan. ix. 26. Ubi dicitur Messias exinanendus, ut ei nihil superfit. i. e. quæ in nihilum sit redigendus. *Polt Synops.* in loc.

the Redeemer of mankind contending with the Judge of the whole earth; in an agony, in which Jesus resisted with only *prayers and supplications, strong crying and tears*, Heb. v. 7. an agony preparatory to an event still more terrible, the bare idea of which terrified and troubled him, made *his sweat as it were, great drops of blood falling to the ground*, Luke xxii. 44, and produced this prayer so fruitful in controversies in the schools, and so penetrating and affecting; so fruitful in motives to obedience, devotion, and gratitude, in truly christian hearts, *O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt*, Matt. xxvi. 44. Go further yet, christian! and after thou hast seen all the sufferings, which Jesus Christ endured in going from the garden to the cross; ascend Calvary with him; stop on the summit of the hill, and on that theatre behold the most astonishing of all the works of Almighty God. See this Jesus, *the brightness of the Father's glory, and the express image of his person*, Heb. i. 3. see him stripped, fastened to an accursed tree, confounded with two thieves, nailed to the wood, surrounded with executioners and tormentors, having lost, during this dreadful period, that sight of the comfortable presence of his Father, which constituted all his joy, and being driven to exclaim, *My God! my God! why hast thou forsaken me?* Matt. xxvii. 40. But behold him, amidst all these painful sufferings, firmly supporting his patience by his love, resolutely enduring all these punishments, from those motives of benevolence, which first engaged him to submit to them, ever occupied with the prospect of saving those poor mortals, for whose sake he descended into this world, fixing his eyes on that world of believers, which his cross would subdue to his government, according to his own saying, *I, if I be lifted up from earth, will draw all*

*all men unto me, John xii. 32.* Can we help feeling the force of that motive, which the scripture propoſeth in ſo many places, and ſo very emphatically in theſe words; *The love of Chriſt conſtraineth us, 2 Cor. v. 14.* that is to ſay, engageth and attacheth us cloſely to him; *The love of Chriſt conſtraineth us, becauſe we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead; and that he died for all, that they, which live, ſhould not henceforth live unto themſelves, but unto him, which died for them, and roſe again.* Yea, *The love of Chriſt forceth us,* when we think what he hath done for us.

III. My third article, which ſhould treat of the inclination of a chriſtian, is naturally contained in the ſecond, that is, in that which treats of his engagements. To devote ourſelves to a maſter, who hath carried his love to us ſo far; to devote ourſelves to him by fear and force; to ſubmit to his laws, becauſe he hath the power of precipitating thoſe into hell, who have the audacity to break them; to obey him on this principle only, this is a diſpoſition of mind as deteſtable as diſobedience itſelf, as hateful as open rebellion. The ſame arguments, which prove that a chriſtian is *not his own* by engagement, prove that he is *not his own* by inclination. When, therefore, we ſhall have proved that this ſtate is his *ſolicity* alſo, we ſhall have finiſhed the plan of this diſcourſe.

IV. Can it be difficult to perſuade you on this article? Stretch your imaginations. Find, if you can, any circumſtance in life, in which it would be happier to reject chriſtianity than to ſubmit to it.

Amidſt all the diſorders and confuſions, and (ſo to ſpeak) amidſt the univerſal chaos of the preſent world, it is delightful to belong to the Governor, who firſt formed the world, and who hath aſſured us, that he will diſplay the ſame power

## 38: *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

power in renewing it, which he displayed in creating it.

In the calamities of life, it is delightful to belong to the Master, who distributes them; who distributes them only for our good; who knows afflictions by experience; whose love inclines him to terminate our sufferings; and who continues them from the same principle of love, that inclines him to terminate them, when we shall have derived those advantages from them, for which they were sent.

During the persecutions of the church, it is delightful to belong to a Guardian, who can curb our persecutors, and controul every tyrant; who useth them for the execution of his own counsels; and who will break them in pieces with a rod of iron, when they can no longer contribute to the sanctifying of his servants.

Under a sense of our infirmities; when we are terrified with the purity of that morality, the equity of which we are obliged to own, even while we tremble at its severity; it is delightful to belong to a Judge, who doth not exact his rights with the utmost rigour; who *knoweth our frame*, Psal. ciii. 14. who pitieth our infirmities; and who assureth us, that *he will not break a bruised reed, nor quench the smoking flax*, Matt. xii. 20.

When our passions are intoxicated, in those fatal moments, in which the desire of possessing the objects of our passions wholly occupies our hearts, and we consider them as our paradise, our gods; it is delightful, however incapable we may be of attending to it, to belong to a Lord who restrains and controuls us, because he loves us; and who refuseth to grant us what we so eagerly desire, because he would either preclude those terrible regrets, which penitents feel after the commission of great sins, or those more terrible torments, that are inseparable from final impenitence.

Under

Under a recollection of our rebellions, it is delightful to belong to a Parent, who will receive us favourably when we implore his clemency; who sweetens the bitterness of our remorse; who is touched with our regrets; who wipes away the tears, that the remembrance of our backslidings makes us shed; who *spareth us, as a man spareth his own son, that serveth him*, Mal. iii. 17.

In that empty void, into which we are often conducted, while we seem to enjoy the most solid establishments, the most exquisite pleasures, and the most brilliant honours, it is delightful to belong to a Patron, who reserves for us objects far better suited to our original excellence, and to the immensity of our desires. *To live to Jesus Christ*, then, is the *felicity* of a christian.

But, if it be a felicity to belong to Jesus Christ, while we *live*, it is a felicity incomparably greater to belong to him when we *die*. We will conclude this meditation with this article; and it is an article, that I would endeavour above all others to impress on your hearts, and to engage you, to take home to your houses. But, unhappily, the subject of this article is one of those, which generally make the least impressions on the minds of christians. I know a great many christians, who place their happiness in *living to Jesus Christ*; but how few have love enough for him, to esteem it a felicity to *die to him*! Not only is the number of those small, who experience such a degree of love to Christ; there are very few, who even comprehend what we mean on this subject. Some efforts of divine love resemble very accurate and refined reasonings. They ought naturally to be the most intelligible, to intelligent creatures, and they are generally the least understood. Few people are capable of that attention, which takes the mind from every thing *foreign from the object in contemplation, and*  
fixeth

## 50 *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

fixeth it not only on the subject, but also on that part, on that point of it, if I may be allowed to speak so, which is to be investigated and explained; so that, by a frailty which mankind cannot sufficiently deplore, precision confuseth our ideas, and light itself makes a subject dark. In like manner, there are some efforts of divine love, so detached from sense, so free from all sensible objects, so superior to even all the means, that religion useth to attract us to God, so eagerly aspiring after an union more close, more noble, and more tender, that the greatest part of christians, as I said before, are not only incapable of experiencing them, but they are also hard to be persuaded that there is any reality in what they have been told about them.

*To be Jesus Christ's* in the hour of death by condition, by engagement, and above all by inclination, is the only means of dying with delight. Without these, whatever makes our felicity while we live, will become our punishment when we die; whether it be a criminal object, or an innocent object, or even an object which God himself commandeth us to love.

*Criminal* objects will punish you. They will represent death to you as the messenger of an avenging God, who comes to drag you before a tribunal, where the Judge will examine and punish all your crimes. *Lawful* objects will distress you. Pleasant fields! convenient houses! we must forsake you. Natural relations! agreeable companions! faithful friends! we must give you up. From you, our dear children! who kindle in our hearts a kind of love, that agitates and inflames beings, when nature seems to render them incapable of heat and motion, we must be torn from you.

*Religious* objects, which we are commanded above all others to love, will contribute to our anguish in a dying bed, if they have confined our  
love.

love, and rendered us too sensible to that kind of happiness which piety procures in this world; and if they have prevented our souls from rising into a contemplation of that blessed state, in which there will be no more temple, no more sacraments, no more gross and sensible worship. The man, who is too much attached to these things, is confounded at the hour of death. The land of love, to which he goes, is an unknown country to him; and as the borders of it, on which he stands, and on which alone his eyes are fixed, present only precipices to his view, fear and trembling surround his every step.

But a believer, who loves Jesus Christ with that kind of love, which made St. Paul exclaim, *The love of Christ constraineth us*, 2 Cor. v. 14, finds himself on the summit of his wishes at the approach of death. This believer, living in this world, resembles the son of a great king, whom some sad event tore from his royal parent in his cradle; who knows his parent only by the fame of his virtues; who has always a difficult, and often an intercepted correspondence with his parent; whose remittances, and favours from his parent, are always diminished by the hands through which they come to him. With what transport would such a son meet the moment appointed by his father for his return to his natural state!

I belong to God, (these are the sentiments of the believer, of whom I am speaking) I belong to God, not only by his sovereign dominion over me as a creature; not only by that right, which as a master, who hath redeemed his slave, he hath acquired over me; but I belong to God, because I love him, and because, I know, God alone deserves my highest esteem. The deep impressions, that his adorable perfections have made on my mind, make me impatient with every object, which intercepts my sight of him. I could not

## 92 *The Sovereignty of Jesus Christ*

be content to abide any longer in this world, were he not to ordain my stay; and were I not to consider his will as the only law of my conduct. But the law, that commands me to live, doth not forbid me to desire to die. I consider death as the period fixed for the gratifying of my most ardent wishes, the consummation of my highest joy. "Whilst I am at home in the body, I am absent from the Lord," 2 Cor. v. 6. But it would be incomparably more delightful *to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord*, ver. 8. And what can detain me on earth, when God shall condescend to call me to himself?

Not ye *criminal* objects! you I never loved; and although I have sometimes suffered myself to be seduced by your deceitful appearances of pleasure; yet I have been so severely punished by the tears that you have caused me to shed, and by the remorse which you have occasioned my conscience to feel, that there is no reason to fear my putting you into the plan of my felicity.

Nor shall ye detain me, *lawful* objects! How strong soever the attachments, that unite me to you, may be, you are only streams of happiness, and I am going to the fountain of felicity. You are only emanations of happiness, and I am going to *the happy God*.

Neither shall ye, *religious* objects! detain me. You are only means, and death is going to conduct me to the end; you are only the road, to die is to arrive at home. True, I shall no more read those excellent works, in which authors of the brightest genius have raised the truth from depths of darkness and prejudice, in which it had been buried, and placed it in the most lively point of view. I shall hear no more of those sermons, in which the preacher, animated by the holy Spirit of God, attempts to elevate me above the present world. But I shall hear and contemplate eternal



eternal wisdom, and I shall discover in my commerce with it the views, the designs, the plans of my Creator; and I shall acquire more wisdom in one moment by this mean, than I should ever obtain by hearing the best composed sermons, and by reading the best written books. True, I shall no more devote myself to you, closet exercises! holy meditations! aspirings of a soul in search of its God! crying, *Lord, I beseech thee shew me thy glory!* Exod. xxxiii. 18. Lord, dissipate the dark thick cloud that conceals thee from my sight! suffer me to approach that light, which hath hitherto been inaccessible to me! But death is the dissipation of clouds and darkness; it is an approach to perfect light; it takes me from my closet, and presents me like a seraph at the foot of the throne of God and the Lamb.

True, I shall no more partake of you, ye holy ordinances of religion! ye sacred ceremonies! that have conveyed so many consolations into my soul; that have so amply afforded solidity and solace to the ties, which united my heart to my God; that have so often procured me a heaven on earth; but I quit you because I am going to receive immediate effusions of divine love, pleasures at God's right hand for evermore, *fullness of joy in his presence*, Psal. xvi. 11. I quit you because . . . . .

Alas! your hearts perhaps have escaped me, my brethren! perhaps these emotions, superior to your piety, are no longer the subject of your attention. I have, however, no other direction to give you, than that which may stand for an abridgement of this discourse, of all my other preaching, and of my whole ministry; Love God; be the Lord's by *inclination*, as you are his by *condition*, and by *engagement*. Then, the miseries of this life will be tolerable, and the approach of death delightful. God grant his blessing on the word! To him be honour and glory for ever. Amen.



---

## SERMON IV.

### THE EQUALITY OF MANKIND.

PROVERBS xxii. 2.

*The rich and poor meet together : the Lord is  
the maker of them all.*

**A**MONG the various dispensations of providence, which regard mankind, one of the most advantageous in the original design of the Creator, and at the same time one of the most fatal through our abuse of it, is the diversity of our conditions. How could men have formed one social body, if all conditions had been equal? Had all possessed the same rank, the same opulence, the same power, how could they have relieved one another from the inconveniences, which would have continually attended each of them: Variety of conditions renders men necessary to each other. The governor is necessary to the people, the people are necessary to the governor; wise statesmen are necessary to a powerful soldiery, a powerful soldiery is necessary to wise statesmen. A sense of this necessity is the strongest bond of union, and this it is, which inclines one to assist another in hopes of receiving assistance in his turn,

But if this diversity be connected with the highest utility to mankind in the original design of the Creator, it is become, we must allow, productive of fatal evils through our abuse of it. On the one hand, they, whose condition is the most brilliant, are dazzled with their own brightness; they study the articles, which elevate them above their fellow creatures, and they choose to be ignorant of every thing, that puts themselves on a level with them; they persuade themselves, that

that they are beings incomparable, far more noble and excellent than those vile mortals, on whom they proudly tread, and on whom they scarcely deign to cast a haughty eye. Hence provoking arrogance, cruel reserve, and hence tyranny and despotism. On the other hand, they, who are placed in inferior stations, prostrate their imaginations before these beings, whom they treat rather as gods than men; them they constitute arbiters of right and wrong, true and false; they forget, while they respect the rank which the Supreme Governor of the world hath given to their superiors, to maintain a sense of their own dignity. Hence come soft compliances, base submissions of reason and conscience, slavery the most willing and abject, to the high demands of these phantoms of grandeur, these imaginary gods.

To rectify these different ideas, to humble the one class, and to exalt the other, it is necessary to shew men in their true point of view; to convince them that diversity of condition, which God hath been pleased to establish among them, is perfectly consistent with equality; that the splendid condition of the first, includes nothing that favours their ideas of self-preference; and that there is nothing in the low condition of the last, which deprives them of their real dignity, or debaseth their intelligences formed in the image of God. I design to discuss this subject to-day. The men, who compose this audience, and among whom providence hath very unequally divided the blessings of this life; princes, who command, and to whom God himself hath given authority, and command subjects; subjects, who obey, and on whom God hath imposed obedience as a duty; the rich, who give alms, and the poor who receive them; all, all my hearers, I am going to reduce to their natural equality, and to consider this equality as a source of piety. This is the meaning.

meaning of the wise man in the words, of the text, "The rich and the poor meet together : the Lord is the maker of them all."

Let us enter into the matter. We suppose two truths, and do not attempt to prove them. First, that, although the wise man mentions here only two different states, yet he includes all. Under the general notion of *rich* and *poor*, we think, he comprehends every thing, that makes any sensible difference in the conditions of mankind. Accordingly, it is an incontestible truth, that what he says of the *rich and poor* may be said of the nobleman and plebeian, of the master and the servant. It may be said, the master and the servant, the nobleman and the plebeian, *meet together ; the Lord is the maker of them all :* and so of the rest.

It is not unlikely, however, that Solomon, when he spoke of *the rich and poor*, had a particular design in choosing this kind of diversity of condition to illustrate his meaning in preference to every other. Although I can hardly conceive, that there ever was a period of time, in which the love of riches did fascinate the eyes of mankind, as it does in this age ; yet it is very credible, that in Solomon's time, as in ours, riches made the grand difference among men. Strictly speaking, there are now only two conditions of mankind, that of the rich and that of the poor. Riches decide all, yea those qualities, which seem to have no concern with them, I mean, mental qualifications. Find but the art of amassing money, and you will thereby find that of uniting in your own person all the advantages of which mankind have entertained the highest ideas. How mean soever your birth may have been, you will possess the art of concealing it, and you may form an alliance with the most illustrious families ; how small soever your knowledge may be, you may pass for a superior genius,

98 *The Equality of Mankind.*

capable of deciding questions the most intricate, points the most abstruse; and, what is still more deplorable, you may purchase with silver and gold a kind of honour and virtue, while you remain the most abandoned of mankind, at least, your money will attract that respect, which is due to nothing but honour and virtue.

The second truth which we suppose, is, that this proposition, *the Lord is the maker of them all*, is one of those concise, I had almost said one of those defective propositions, which a judicious auditor ought to fill up, in order to give it a proper meaning. The style is very common in our scriptures; it is peculiarly proper in septentian works, such as this, out of which we have taken the text. The design of Solomon is to teach us, that whatever diversities of conditions there may be in society, the men, who compose it, are *essentially equal*. The reason that he assigns, is, *the Lord is the maker of them all*. If this idea be not added, the proposition proves nothing at all. It does not follow, because the same God is the *creator* of two beings, that there is any resemblance between them, much less that they are equal. Is not God the creator of pure unembodied intelligences, who have faculties superior to those of mankind? Is not God the author of their existence as well as of ours? Because *God is the creator of both*, does it follow that both are equal? God is no less the creator of the organs of an ant, than he is the creator of the sublime geniuses of a part of mankind. Because God hath created an ant and a sublime genius, does it follow, that these two beings are equal? The meaning of the words of Solomon depends then on what a prudent reader supplies. We may judge what ought to be supplied by the nature of the subject, and by a parallel passage in the book of Job. "Did not he, that made me in the womb, make my servant? and did he

not fashion us alike \* chap. xxxi, 14. To the words of our text, therefore, *the Lord is the maker of them all*, we must add, *the Lord hath fashioned them all alike*. Nothing but gross ignorance, or wild treachery, can incline an expositor to abuse this liberty of making up the sense of a passage, and induce him to conclude, that he may add to a text whatever may seem to him the most proper to support a favourite opinion, or to cover an unworthy passion. When we are inquisitive for truth, it is easy to discover the passages of holy scripture, in which the authors have made use of these concise imperfect sentences.

Of this kind are all passages, which excite no distinct ideas, or which excite ideas foreign from the scope of the writer, unless the meaning be supplied. For example, we read these words in the eleventh chapter of St. Paul's second epistle to the Corinthians, ver. 4. "If he, that cometh, preacheth another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him." If we attach such ideas to these words, as they seem at first to excite, we shall take them in a sense quite opposite to the meaning of St. Paul. The apostle aimed to make the Corinthians respect his ministry, and to consider his apostleship as confirmed of God, in a manner as clear and decisive as that of any minister, who had preached to them. Is the proposition, that we have read, any thing to this purpose, unless we supply what is not expressed? But if we supply what

\* This reading of the French bible differs a little from our translation; but a comparison of the two translations with the original, and with the scope of the place, will give the preference to the French reading. *Nonne despitent nous, si nous nous avons eue &.* Vide *Pol. Sytopsi* in loc.

what is understood, and add these words, *but this is incredible*, or any others equivalent, we shall perceive the force of his reasoning, which is this: If there hath been among you any one, whose preaching have revealed a Redeemer, better adapted to your wants than he, whom we have preached to you; or if you have received more excellent gifts than those, which the holy Spirit so abundantly diffused among you by our ministry, you might indeed have preferred him before us; but it is not credible, that you have had such teachers: you ought then to respect our ministry.

We need not make any more remarks of this kind; our text, it is easy to see, ought to be classed with them, that are imperfect, and must be supplied with words to make up the sense. *The rich and the poor meet together* in four articles of equality; because *the Lord hath made them all equal* in nature or in essence, equal in privileges, equal in appointments, equal in their last ends. The Lord hath made them equal in nature; they have the same faculties, and the same infirmities: Equal in privileges; for both are capable by the excellency of their nature, and more still by that of their religion, to form the noblest designs: Equal in designation; for although the rich differ from the poor in their condition, yet both are intended to answer the great purposes of God with regard to human nature: Finally, they are equal in their last end; the same sentence of death is passed on both, and both alike must submit to it. "The rich and the poor meet together: the Lord is the maker of them all." Thus the text affords us four truths worthy of our most serious attention.

The first article of equality, in which men meet together, is an equality of essence or of nature; the Lord hath made them all with the same faculties; and with the same infirmities.

L. With



1. *With the same faculties.* What is man? He consists of a body, and of a soul united to a body. This definition, or rather, if you will, this description, agrees to all mankind, to the great as well as to the small, to the rich as well as to the poor. The soul of the poor hath the same power as that of the rich, and to lay down principles, to infer consequences, to distinguish truth from falsehood, to chuse good or evil, or examine what is most advantageous and most glorious to it. The body of the poor, as well as that of the rich, displays the wisdom of him, who formed it; it hath a symmetry in its parts, an exactness in its motions, and a proportion to its secret springs. The laws, that unite the body of the poor to his soul, are the same as those, which unite these two beings in the rich; there is the same connexion between the two parts, that constitute the essence of the man; a similar motion of the body produceth a similar thought in the mind; a similar idea of the mind, or a similar emotion of the heart, produceth a similar motion of the body. This is man. These are the faculties of men. Diversity of condition makes no alteration in these faculties.

2. *The Lord hath made them all with the same infirmities.* They have the same infirmities of body. The body of the rich, as well as that of the poor, is a common receptacle, where a thousand impurities meet; it is a general rendezvous of pains and sicknesses; it is a house of clay, whose foundation is in the dust, and is crushed before the moth, Job iv. 19.

They have the same mental infirmities. The mind of the rich, like that of the poor, is incapable of satisfying itself on a thousand desirable questions. The mind of the rich, as well as that of the poor, is prevented by its natural ignorance, when it would expand itself in contemplation, and eclaircise a number of obvious phenomena.

The

The soul of the rich, like that of the poor, is subject to doubt, uncertainty, and ignorance; and, what is more mortifying still, the heart of the rich, like the poor man's heart, is subject to the same passions, to envy, and to anger, and to all the disorder of sin.

They have the same frailties in the laws, that unite the soul to the body. The soul of the rich, like the soul of the poor, is united to a body, or rather enslaved by it. The soul of the rich, like that of the poor, is interrupted in its most profound meditations by a single ray of light, by the buzzing of a fly, or by the touch of an atom of dust. The rich man's faculties of reasoning and of self-determining are suspended, and in some sort vanished and absorbed, like those of the poor, on the slightest alteration of the senses; and this alteration of the senses happens to him, as well as to the poor, at the approach of certain objects. David's reason is suspended at the sight of Bathsheba; David no longer distinguisheth good from evil; David forgets the purity of the laws, which he himself had so highly celebrated; and, at the sight of this object, his whole system of piety is refused, his whole edifice of religion sinks and disappears.

The second point of equality, in which *the rich and the poor meet together*, is an equality of *privileges*. To aspire at certain eminences, when providence hath placed us in inferior stations in society, is egregious folly. If a man, who hath only ordinary talents, only a common genius, pretend to acquire an immortal reputation among heroes, and to fill the world with his name and exploits, he acts fancifully and wildly. If he, who was born a subject, rashly and ambitiously attempt to ascend the tribunal of a magistrate, or the throne of a king, and to aim at governing, when he is called to obey, he is guilty of rebellion. But this law, which forbids inferiors to arrogate

rogate to themselves some privileges, doth not prohibit them from aspiring at others, incomparably more great and glorious.

Let us discover, if it be possible, the most miserable man in this assembly; let us dissipate the darkness that covers him; let us raise him from that kind of grave, in which his indigence and meanness conceal him. This man, unknown to the rest of mankind; this man, who seems hardly formed by the Creator into an intelligent existence; this man hath, however, the greatest and most glorious privileges. This man, being reconciled to God by religion, hath a right to aspire to the most noble and sublime objects of it. He hath a right to elevate his soul to God in ardent prayer; and, without the hazard of being taxed with vanity, he may assure himself, that God, the Great God, encircled in glory, and surrounded with the praises of the blessed, will behold him, hear his prayer, and grant his request. This man hath a right to say to himself, The attention, that the Lord of nature gives to the government of the universe, to the wants of mankind, to the innumerable company of angels, and to his own felicity, doth not prevent this adorable Being from attending to me; from occupying himself about my person, my children, my family, my house, my health, my substance, my salvation, my most minute concern, even a single *hair of my head*, Luke xxi. 18. This man hath a right of addressing God by names the most tender and mild; yea, if I may venture to speak so, by those most familiar names, which equals give each other; he may call him his God, his master, his father, his friend. Believers have addressed God by each of these names, and God hath not only permitted them to do so, he hath even expressed his approbation of their taking these names in their mouths. This man hath a right of coming to eat with God at the Lord's table.

104      *The Equality of Mankind.*

able, and to live, if I may be allowed to speak so, to live with God, as a man lives with his friend. This man hath a right to apply to himself whatever is most great, most comfortable, most extatic in the mysteries of redemption, and to say to himself, For me the divine Intelligence revolved the plan of redemption; for me the Son of God was appointed, before the foundation of the world, to be a propitiatory sacrifice; for me in the fulness of time he took mortal flesh; for me he lived several years among men in this world; for me he pledged himself to the justice of his Father, and suffered such unparalleled punishment, as confounds reason and surpasses imagination; for me the holy Spirit *shook the heavens and the earth, and the sea and the dry land*, Hag. ii. 6. and established a ministry, which he confirmed by healing the sick, by raising the dead, by casting out devils, and by subverting the whole order of nature. This man hath a right to aspire to the felicity of the immortal God, to the glory of the immortal God, to the throne of the immortal God. Arrived at the fatal hour, lying on his dying bed, reduced to the sight of useless friends, ineffectual remedies, unavailing tears, he hath a right to triumph over death, and to defy his disturbing in the smallest degree the tranquil calm, that his soul enjoys; he hath a right to summon the gates of heaven to admit his soul, and to say to them, *Lift up your heads, O ye gates! even lift them up, ye everlasting doors!*

These are the incontestible privileges of the man, who appears to us so contemptible. I ask, my brethren, have the nobles of the earth any privileges more than these? Do the train of attendants, which follows them, the horses, that draw them, the grandees, who surround them, the superb titles, which command exterior homage, give them any real superiority over the man,

who

who enjoys those privileges, which we have briefly enumerated? Ah! my brethren, nothing proves the littleness of great men more than the impression, which the exterior advantages, that distinguish them from the rest of mankind, make on their minds. Are you aware of what you are doing, when you despise them whom providence placeth for a few years in a situation inferior to your own? You are despising and degrading yourselves, you are renouncing your real greatness, and, by valuing yourselves for a kind of foreign glory, you discover a contempt for that, which constitutes the real dignity of your nature. The glory of man does not consist in his being a master, or a rich man, a nobleman, or a king; it consists in his being a man, in his being formed in the image of his Creator, and capable of all the elevation, that we have been describing. If you condemn your inferiors in society, you plainly declare, that you are insensible to your real dignity; for, had you derived your ideas of real greatness from their true source, you would have respected it in persons, who appear the most mean and despicable. *The rich and the poor meet together; the Lord hath endowed them all with the same privileges. They all meet together on the same line of equality in regard to their claims of privileges.* This was the point to be proved.

We add, in the third place, *the rich and the poor meet together* in an equality of destination. Rich and poor are placed by providence in different ranks, I grant; but their different stations are fixed with the same design, I mean, to accomplish the purposes of God in regard to men.

What are the designs of God in regard to men? What end doth he propose to effect by placing us on this planet, thirty, forty, or sixty years, before he declares our eternal state? We have frequently answered this important question. God hath placed us here in a state of probation:

he hath set before our eyes supreme felicity and intolerable misery; he hath pointed out the vices, that conduct to the last, and the virtues necessary to arrive at the first; and he hath declared, that our conduct shall determine our future fate. This, I think, is the design of God in regard to men. This is the notion, that we ought to form, of the end which God proposes in fixing us a few years upon earth, and in placing us among our fellow creatures in society.

On this principle, which is the most glorious condition? It is neither that, which elevates us highest in society, nor that, which procureth us the greatest conveniences of life. If it be not absolutely indifferent to men, to whom it is uncertain whether they shall quit the present world the next moment, or continue almost a century in it; I say, if it be not absolutely indifferent to them, whether they be high or low, rich or poor, it would be contrary to all the laws of prudence, were they to determine their choice of a condition by considerations of this kind alone. A creature capable of eternal felicity, ought to consider that the most glorious condition, which is the most likely to procure him the eternal felicity, of which he is capable. Were a wise man to choose a condition, he would certainly prefer that, in which he could do most good; he would always consider that as the most glorious station for himself, in which he could best answer the great end, for which his Creator placed him in this world. It is glorious to be at the head of a nation; but if I could do more good in a mean station, than I could do in an eminent post, the meanest station would be far more glorious to me than the most eminent post. Why? because that is most glorious to me, which best answers the end that my Creator proposed in placing me in this world. God placed me in this world to enable me to do good, and prepare myself by a holy  
 life

life for a happy eternity. To do good at the head of a nation, certain talents are necessary. If I have not these talents, not only I should not do good in this post, but I should certainly do evil. I should expose my country to danger; I should sink its credit, obscure its glory, and debase its dignity. It is, therefore, incomparably less glorious for me to be at the head of a state, than to occupy a post less eminent. It is glorious to fill the highest office in the church, to announce the oracles of God, to develope the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, and to direct wandering souls to the road that leads to the sovereign good; but if I be destitute of gifts essential to the filling of this office, it is incomparably more glorious to me to remain a pupil than to commence a tutor. Why? because that station is the most eligible to me, which best empowers me to answer the end for which my Creator placed me in this world. My Creator placed me in this world, that I might do good, and that by a holy life I might prepare for a happy eternity. In order to do good in the highest offices in the church, great talents are necessary. If God hath not bestowed great talents on me, I should not only not do good, but I should do harm. Instead of announcing the oracles of God, I should preach the traditions of men; I should involve the mysteries of religion in darkness, instead of developing them; I should plunge poor mortals into an abyss of misery, instead of pointing out the road which would conduct them to a blessed immortality. But by remaining in the state of a disciple, I may obtain attention, docility, and a love to truth, which are the virtues of my condition. It is more glorious to be a good subject than a bad king; it is more glorious to be a good disciple than a bad teacher.

But most men have false ideas of glory, and we form our notions of it from the opinions of these unjust

unjust appraisers of men and things. That, which elevates us in their eyes, seems glorious to us; and we esteem that contemptible, which abaseth us before them. We discover, I know not what, meanness in mechanical employments, and the contempt that we have for the employment extends itself to him who follows it, and thus we habituate ourselves to despise them whom God honours. Let us undeceive ourselves, my brethren; there is no condition shameful, except it necessarily lead us to some infraction of the laws of our Supreme *Lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy*, James iv. 12. Strictly speaking, one condition of life is no more honourable than another. There are, I grant, some stations, in which the objects, that employ those who fill them, are naturally more noble than those of other stations. The condition of a magistrate, whose employment is to improve and to enforce maxims of government, hath a nobler object than that of a mechanic, whose business it is to improve the least necessary art. There is a nobler object in the station of a pastor called to publish the laws of religion, than in that of a schoolmaster confined to teach the letters of the alphabet. But God will regulate our eternal state not according to the object of our pursuit, but according to the manner in which we should have pursued it. In this point of light, all ranks are equal, every condition is the same. Mankind have, then, an equality of *destination*. The rich and the poor are placed in different ranks with the same view, both are to answer the great end, that God hath proposed to answer by creating and arranging mankind.

Hitherto we have had occasion for some little labour to prove our thesis, that all men are equal, notwithstanding the various conditions in which God hath placed them. And you, my brethren, have had occasion for some *docility* to feel the force



force of our arguments. But in our fourth article, the truth will establish itself, and its force will be felt by a recital, yea by a hint of our arguments:

We said, fourthly, that men are equal in their *last end*, that the same sentence of death is denounced on all, and that they must all alike submit to their fate. On which side can we view death, and not receive abundant evidence of this truth? Consider the certainty of death, the nearness of death, the harbingers of death, the ravages of death, so many sides by which death may be considered, so many proofs, so many demonstrations, so many sources of demonstrations of the truth of this sense of my text, *the rich and poor meet together, the Lord is the maker of them all.*

1. Remark the *certainty* of death. "Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return," Gen. iii. 19. "It is appointed unto men once to die," Heb. ix. 27. The sentence is universal, its universality involves all the posterity of Adam; it includes all conditions, all professions, all stations, and every step of life ensures the execution of it.

Whither art thou going, rich man! thou, who congratulatest thyself because thy *fields bring forth plentifully*, and who sayest to thy soul, *Soul! thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry?* To death. Whither art thou going, poor man! thou, who art toiling through a languishing life, who beggest thy bread from door to door, who art continually perplexed in finding out means of procuring bread to eat and raiment to put on, always an object of the charity of some, and of the hardheartedness of others? To death. Whither goest thou, nobleman! thou, who deckest thyself with borrowed plumes, who puttest the renown of thine ancestors into the list of thy virtues, and who thinkest thyself formed of

an earth more refined than that of the rest of mankind? To death. Whither goest thou, peasant! thou, who deridest the folly of a peer, and at the same time valuest thyself on something equally absurd? To death. Whither, soldier! art thou marching; thou, who talkest of nothing but glory and heroism, and who amid many voices sounding in thine ears, and incessantly crying, *Remember thou art mortal*, art dreaming of, I know not what, immortality? To death. Whither art thou going, merchant! thou, who breathest nothing but the increase of thy fortune, and who judgest of the happiness or misery of thy days, not by thine acquisition of knowledge and thy practice of virtue, but by the gain or the loss of thy wealth? To death. Whither are we all going, my dear hearers? To death. Do I exceed the truth, my brethren? Does death regard titles, dignities, and riches? Where is Alexander? Where is Cæsar? Where are all they, whose names struck terror through the whole world? They were: but they are no more. They fell before the voice, that cried, *Return, ye children of men*, Psal. xc. 3. "I said, Ye are gods; but ye shall die like men," Psal. lxxxii. 6. *I said, Ye are gods*; this, ye great men of the earth! this is your title; this is the patent, that creates your dignity, that subjects us to your commands, and teacheth us to revere your characters: *but ye shall die like men*; this is the decree, that degrades you, and puts you on a level with us. *Ye are gods*; I will, then, respect your authority, and consider you as images of him, *by whom kings reign*: *but ye shall die*. I will not, then, suffer myself to be imposed on by your grandeur, and whatever homage I may yield to my king, I will always remember that he is a man. The certainty of death is the first rule, on which we may consider this murderer of

mankind; and it is the first proof of our fourth proposition: Mankind are equal in their *last end*.

2. The *proximity* of death is a second demonstration, a second source of demonstrations. The limits of our lives are equal. The life of the rich, as well as that of the poor, is *reduced to an hand-breadth*; Psal. xxxix. 5. Sixty, eighty, or a hundred years, is usually the date of a long life. The sceptre hath no more privilege in this respect than the crook; nor is the palace at any greater distance from the tomb, than the cottage from the grave. Heaps of silver and gold may intercept the rich man's flight of death; but they can neither intercept death's flight of the rich man, nor prevent his forcing the feeble intrenchments, in which he may attempt to hide himself.

3. The *harbingers* of death are a third demonstration, a third source of demonstrations. The rich have the same forerunners as the poor; both have similar dying agonies, violent sicknesses, disgusting medicines, intolerable pains, and cruel misgivings. Pass through those superb apartments, in which the rich man seems to defy the enemy, who lurks and threatens to seize him; go through the croud of domestics, who surround him; cast your eyes on the bed, where nature and art have contributed to his ease. In this grand edifice, amidst this assembly of courtiers, or, shall I rather say? amidst this troop of vile slaves, you will find a most mortifying and miserable object. You will see a visage all pale, livid, distorted; you will hear the shrieks of a wretch tormented with the gravel, or the gout; you will see a soul terrified with the fear of those eternal books, which are about to be opened, of that formidable tribunal, which is already erected, of the awful sentence, that is about to be denounced.

4. The *ravages* of death make a fourth demonstration; they are the same with the rich as with

with the poor. Death alike condemns their eyes to impenetrable night, their tongue to eternal silence, their whole system to total destruction. I see a superb monument. I approach this striking object. I see magnificent inscriptions. I read the pompous titles of the *most noble, the most puissant, general, prince, monarch, arbiter of peace, arbiter of war.* I long to see the inside of this elegant piece of workmanship, and I peep under the stone, that covers him, to whom all this pomp is consecrated; there I find, what ----- a putrified carcase devouring by worms. O vanity of human grandeur! "Vanity of vanities, all is vanity!". Put not your trust in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom is no help," Eccl. i. 2. "His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth, in that very day his thoughts perish," Psal. cxlvi. 3. 4. "As for man, his days are as grass; as a flower of the field so he flourisheth; for the wind passeth over it, and it is gone: and the place thereof shall know it no more," Psal. ciii. 15, 16.

5. Finally, *the judgment*, that follows death, carries our proposition to the highest degree of evidence. "It is appointed unto men once to die; but after this the judgment," Heb. ix. 27. The rich and the poor must alike appear before that throne, which St. John describes in the revelation, and before that venerable personage, *from whose face the heaven and the earth flee away*, chap. xx. 11. If there be any difference between the rich and the poor, it is all, methinks, in favour of the latter. The summons, that must be one day addressed to each of us, *give an account of thy stewardship*, Luke xvi. 2. this summons is always terrible. You indigent people! whom God (to use the language of scripture) hath set over a few things, an account of these few things will be required of you, and you will

be as surely punished for hiding *one talent*, as if you had hidden more, Matt. xxv. 17.

But how terrible to me seems the account, that must be given of a great number of talents! If the rich man have some advantages over the poor, (and who can doubt that he hath many?) how are his advantages counterpoised by the thought of the consequences of death! What a summons, my brethren! is this, for a great man, *Give an account of thy stewardship!* give an account of thy riches. Didst thou acquire them lawfully? or were they the produce of unjust dealings, of cruel extortions, of repeated frauds, of violated promises, of perjuries and oaths? Didst thou distribute them charitably, compassionately, liberally? or didst thou reserve them avariciously, meanly, barbarously? Didst thou employ them to found hospitals, to procure instruction for the ignorant, relief for the sick, consolation for the afflicted? or didst thou employ them to cherish thy pride, to display thy vanity, to immortalize thine ambition and arrogance? Give an account of thy reputation. Didst thou employ it to relieve the oppressed, to protect the widow and orphan, to maintain justice, to diffuse truth, to propagate religion? or, on the contrary, didst thou use it to degrade others, to deify thy passions, to render thyself a scourge to society, a plague to mankind? Give an account of thine honours. Didst thou direct them to their true end, by contributing all in thy power to the good of society, to the defence of thy country, to the prosperity of trade, to the advantage of the public? or didst thou direct them only to thine own private interest, to the establishing of thy fortune, to the elevation of thy family, to the insatiable avidity of glory, which gnawed and devoured thee? Ah! my brethren! if we enter very seriously into these reflections, we shall not be so much struck, as we usually are,  
with

with the diversity of men's conditions in this life; we shall not aspire very eagerly after the highest ranks in this world. *The rich and poor meet together, the Lord is the maker of them all*; that is to say, he hath made them equal in their nature, equal in their privileges, equal in their destination, and equal, as we have proved, in their last end.

The inferences, that we intend to draw from what we have said, are not inferences of sedition and anarchy. We do not mean to disturb the order of society; nor, by affirming that all men have an essential equality, to rebrogate that subordination, without which society would be nothing but confusion, and the men, who compose it, a lawless banditti. We affirm, that the subject and the prince, the master and the servant, are truly and properly equal; but far be it from us to infer, that therefore the subject should withdraw his submission from his prince, or the servant diminish his obedience to his master. On the contrary, subjects and servants would renounce all, that is glorious in their conditions, if they entertained such wild ideas in their minds. That, which equals them to the superiors, whom providence hath set over them, is the belief of their being capable, as well as their superiors, of answering the end that God proposeth in creating mankind. They would counteract this end, were they to refuse to discharge those duties of their condition, to which providence calls them.

Nor would we derive from the truths, which we have affirmed, fanatical inferences. We endeavoured before to preclude all occasion for reproach on this article, yet perhaps we may not escape it; for how often does an unfriendly auditor, in order to enjoy the pleasure of decrying a disgusting truth, affect to forget the corrective, with which the preacher sweetens it? we repeat it, therefore, once more; we do not pretend to  
 affirm.

affirm, that the conditions of all men are absolutely equal, by affirming that in some senses all mankind are on a level. We do not say, that the man, whom society agrees to condemn, is as happy as the man, whom society unites to revere. We do not say, that the man, who hath no where to hide his head, is as happy as he, who is commodiously accommodated. We do not say, that a man, who is destitute of all the necessaries of life, is as happy as the man, whose fortune is sufficient to procure him all the conveniences of it. No, my brethren! we have no more design to deduce inferences of fanaticism from the doctrine of the text, than we have to infer maxims of anarchy and rebellion. But we infer just conclusions, conformable to the precious gift of reason, that the Creator hath bestowed on us, and to the incomparably more precious gift of religion, with which he hath enriched us. Derive then, my brethren, conclusions of these kinds, and let them be the application of this discourse.

Derive from our subject conclusions of *moderation*. Labour, for it is allowable, and the morality of the gospel doth not condemn it, labour to render your name illustrious, to augment your fortune, to establish your reputation, to contribute to the pleasure of your life; but labour no more than becomes you. Let efforts of this kind never make you lose sight of the great end of life. Remember, as riches, grandeur, and reputation, are not the supreme good, so obscurity, meanness, and indigence, are not the supreme evil. Let the care of avoiding the supreme evil, and the desire of obtaining the supreme good, be always the most ardent of our wishes, and let others yield to that of arriving at the chief good.

Derive from our doctrine conclusions of *acquiescence* in the laws of providence. If it please providence to put an essential difference between you and the great men of the earth, let it be  
your

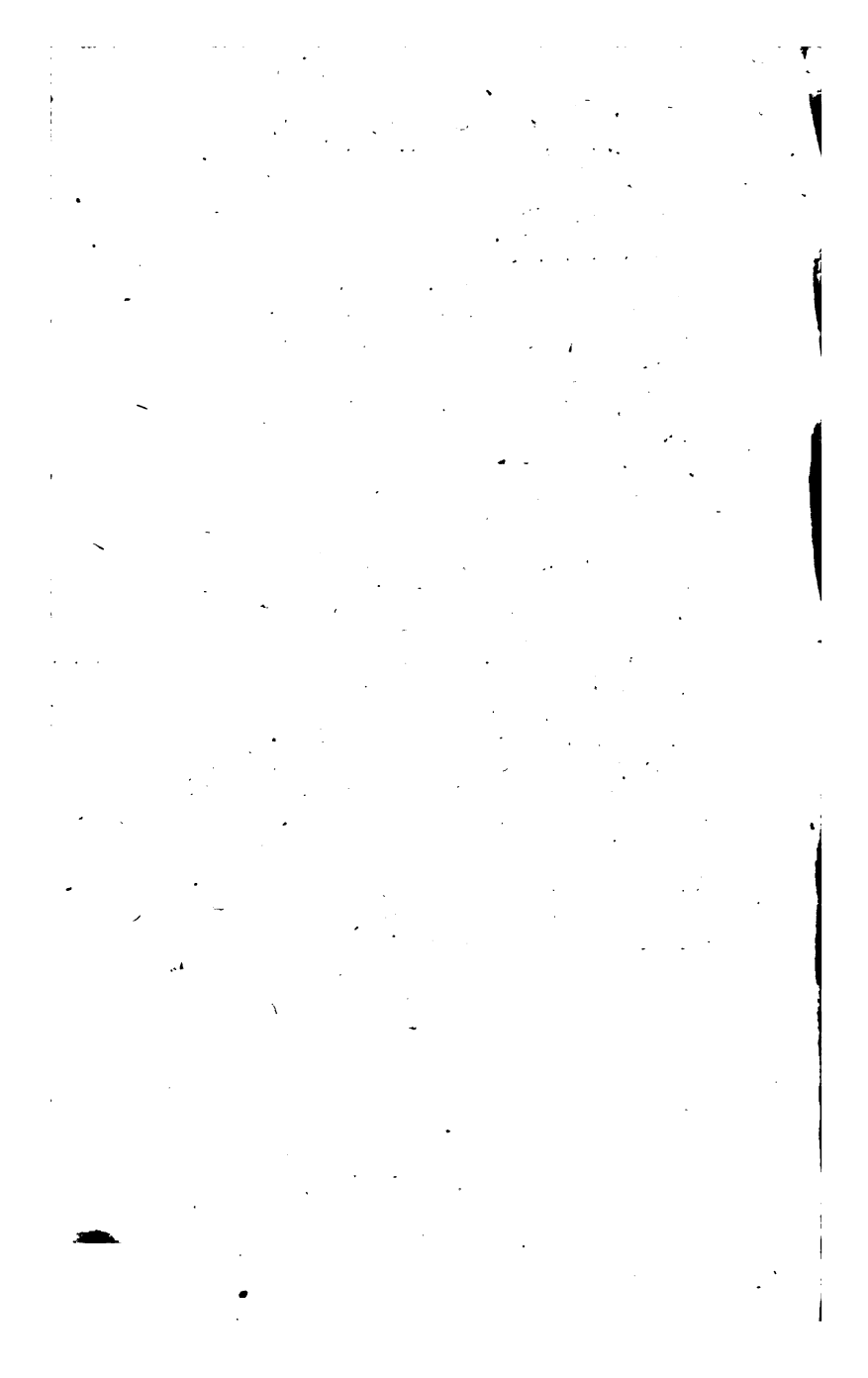
your holy ambition to excel in it. You cannot murmur without being guilty of reproaching God, because he hath made you what you are; because he formed you men, and not angels, archangels, or seraphims. Had he annexed essential privileges to the highest ranks, submission would always be your lot, and you ought always to adore, and to submit to that intelligence, which governs the world; but this is not your case. God gives to the great men of the earth an exterior, transient, superficial glory; but he hath made you share with them a glory real, solid, and permanent. What difficulty can a wise man find by acquiescing in this law of providence?

Derive from the truths you have heard conclusions of *vigilance*. Instead of ingeniously flattering yourself with the vain glory of being elevated above your neighbour, or of suffering your mind to sink under the puerile mortification of being inferior to him, incessantly inquire what is the virtue of your station, the duty of your rank, and use your utmost industry to fill it worthily. You are a *magistrate*: the virtue of your station, the duty of your rank, is to employ yourself wholly to serve your fellow subjects in inferior stations, to prefer the public good before your own private interest, to sacrifice yourself for the advantage of that state, the reins of which you hold. Practise this virtue, fulfil these engagements, put off self-interest, and devote yourself wholly to a people, who entrust you with their properties, their liberties, and their lives. You are a *subject*: the duty of your rank, the virtue of your station, is submission, and you should obey not only through fear of punishment, but through a wise regard for order. Practise this virtue, fulfil this engagement, make it your glory to submit, and in the authority of princes respect the power of God, whose ministers and representatives they are. You are a *rich man*: the virtue of your station, the



the duty of your condition, is beneficence, generosity, magnanimity. Practise these virtues, discharge these duties. Let your heart be always moved with the necessities of the wretched, and your ears open to their complaints. Never omit an opportunity of doing good, and be in society a general resource, and universal refuge.

From the truths, which you have heard, derive motives of *zeal and fervour*. It is mortifying, I own, in some respects, when one feels certain emotions of dignity and elevation, to sink in society. It is mortifying to beg bread of one, who is a man like ourselves. It is mortifying to be trodden under foot by our equals, and, to say all in a word, to be in stations very unequal among our equals. But this economy will quickly vanish. *The fashion of this world* will presently pass away, and we shall soon enter that blessed state, in which all distinctions will be abolished, and in which all that is noble in immortal souls, will shine in all its splendor. Let us, my brethren, sigh after this period, let us make it the object of our most constant and ardent prayers. God grant, we may all have a right to pray for it! God grant, our text may be one day verified in a new sense. May all, who compose this assembly, masters and servants, rich and poor, may we all, my dear hearers, having acknowledged ourselves equal in essence, in privileges, in destination, in last end, may we all alike participate the same glory. God grant it, for his mercy's sake.—  
Amen.



---

## SERMON V.

---

### THE WORTH OF THE SOUL.

MATTHEW xvi. 26.

*What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?*

**M**Y brethren, before we enforce the truths, which Jesus Christ included in the words of the text, we will endeavour to fix the meaning of it. This depends on the term *soul*, which is used in this passage, and which is one of the most equivocal words in scripture; for it is taken in different, and even in contrary senses, so that sometimes it signifies a *dead body*, Lev. xxi. 1. We will not divert your attention now, by reciting the long list of explications, that may be given to the term; but we will content ourselves with remarking, that it can be taken only in two senses in the text.

*Soul* may be taken for *life*; and in this sense the term is used by St. Matthew, who says, *They are dead, who sought the young child's soul*, chap. ii. 20. *Soul* may be taken for that spiritual part of us, which we call *the soul* by excellence; and in this sense it is used by our Lord, who says, *Fear not them, which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him, which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell*, chap. x. 28.

If we take the words in the first sense, for *life*, we put into the mouth of Jesus Christ a proposition verified by experience; that is, that men consider life as the greatest of all temporal blessings, and that they part with every thing to preserve it. This rule hath its exceptions; but the exceptions confirm the rule. Sometimes, indeed, a disgust with the world, a principle of religion,

a point of honour, will incline men to sacrifice their lives; but these particular cases cannot prevent our saying in the general, *What shall a man give in exchange for his life?*

If we take the word for that part of man, which we call the *soul* by excellence, Jesus Christ intended to point out to us, not what men usually do, (for alas! it happens too often, that men sacrifice their souls to the meanest and most sordid interest) but what they always ought to do. He meant to teach us, that the soul is the noblest part of us, and that nothing is too great to be given for its ransom.

Both these interpretations are probable, and each hath its partizans and its proofs. But, although we would not condemn the first, we prefer the last, not only because it is the most noble meaning, and opens the most extensive field of meditation; but because it seems to us the most conformable to our Saviour's design in speaking the words.

Judge by what precedes our text. "What is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?" Jesus Christ spoke thus to fortify his disciples against the temptations, to which their profession of the gospel was about to expose them. If by the word *soul* we understand the *life*, we shall be obliged to go a great way about to give any reasonable sense to the words. On the contrary, if we take the word for the *spirit*, the meaning of the whole is clear and easy. Now it seems to me beyond a doubt, that Jesus Christ, by the manner in which he hath connected the text with the preceding verse, used the term *soul* in the latter sense.

Judge of our comment also by what follows. "What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" For, adds our Lord immediately after, *the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he shall reward every*

*every man according to his works.* What connexion have these words with our text, if we take the word *soul* for *life*? What connexion is there between this proposition, *Man hath nothing more valuable than life,* and this, *For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels?* Whereas, if we adopt our sense of the term, the connexion instantly appears.

We will, then, retain this explication. By the *soul* we understand here the *spirit* of man; and, this word being thus explained, the meaning of Jesus Christ in the whole passage is understood in part, and one remark will be sufficient to explain it wholly. We must attend to the true meaning of the phrase, *lose his soul,* which immediately precedes the text, and which we shall often use to explain the text itself. To *lose the soul,* does not signify to be deprived of this part of one's self; for, however great this punishment might be, it is the chief object of a wicked man's wishes: but to *lose the soul,* is to lose those real blessings, and to sustain those real evils, which a soul is capable of enjoying and of suffering. When, therefore, Jesus Christ says in the words, that precede the text, *What is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?* and in the text, *What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?* he exhibits one truth under different faces, so that our reflections will naturally be turned sometimes to the one, and sometimes to the other of these propositions. He points out, I say, two truths, which being united, signify, that as the conquest of the universe would not be an object of value sufficient to engage us to sacrifice our souls, so, if we had lost them, no price could be too great to be paid for the recovery of them. Let us here fix our attention; and let us examine what constitutes the dignity of the soul. Let us inquire,

- I. The excellence of its nature ;
- II. The infinity of its duration ;
- III. The price of its redemption : Three articles which will divide this discourse.

I. Nothing can be given in exchange for our souls. We prove this proposition by the excellence of its *nature*. What is the soul ? There have been great absurdities, in the answers given to this question. In former ages of darkness, when most of the studies, that were pursued for the cultivation of the mind, served to render it unfruitful ; when, people thought, they had arrived at the highest degree of knowledge, if they had filled their memories with pompous terms and superb nonsense ; in those times, I say, it was thought, the question might be fully and satisfactorily answered, and clear and complete ideas given of the nature of the soul. But in later times, when, philosophy being cleansed from the impurities that infected the schools, equivocal terms were rejected, and only clear and distinct ideas admitted, and thus literary investigations reduced to real and solid use ; in these days, I say, philosophers, and philosophers of great name, have been afraid to answer this question, and have affirmed that the narrow limits, which confine our researches, disable us from acquiring any other than obscure notions of the human soul, and that all, which we can propose to elucidate the nature of it, serve rather to discover what it is not, than what it is. But if the decisions of the former favour of the presumption, does not the timid reservedness of the latter seem a blameable modesty ? If we be incapable of giving such sufficient answers to the question as would fully satisfy a genius earnest inquiring, and eager for demonstration, may we not be able to give clear and high ideas of our souls, and so to verify these sententious words of the Saviour of the world, *What shall a man give in exchange for his soul ?* Indeed,

Indeed, we do clearly and distinctly know three properties of the soul; and every one of us knows by his own experience, that it is capable of knowing, willing, and feeling. The first of these properties is intelligence, the second volition, the third sensation, or, more properly, the acutest sensibility. I am coming now to the design of my text, and here I hope to prove, at least to the intelligent part of my hearers, by the nature of the soul, that the loss of it is the greatest of all losses, and that nothing is too valuable to be given for its recovery.

*Intelligence* is the first property of the soul, and the first idea, that we ought to form of it, know its nature. The perfection of this property consists in having clear and distinct ideas, extensive and certain knowledge. *To lose the soul*, in this respect, is to sink into total ignorance. This loss is irreparable, and he, who should have lost his soul in this sense, could give nothing too great for its recovery. Knowledge and happiness are inseparable in intelligent beings, and, it is clear, a soul deprived of intelligence cannot enjoy perfect felicity. Few men, I know, can be persuaded to admit this truth; and there are, I must allow, great restrictions to be made on this article, while we are in the present state.

1. In our present state, *every degree of knowledge, that the mind acquires, costs the body much.* A man, who would make a progress in science, must retire, meditate, and, in some sense, involve himself in himself. Now meditation exhausts the animal spirits, close attention tires the brain; the collection of the soul into itself often injures the health, and sometimes puts a period to life.

2. In our present state, *our knowledge is confined within narrow bounds.* Questions the most worthy of our curiosity, and the most proper to animate and inflame us, are unanswerable; for the objects lie beyond our reach. From all our efforts

efforts to elucidate such questions, we sometimes derive only mortifying reflections on the weakness of our capacities, and the narrow limits of our knowledge.

3. In this present state, *sciences are incapable of demonstration*, and consist, in regard to us, of little more than probabilities and appearances. A man, whose genius is a little exact, is obliged in multitudes of cases to doubt, and to suspend his judgment; and his pleasure of investigating a point is almost always interrupted by the too well-grounded fear of taking a shadow for a substance, a phantom for a reality.

4. In this world, *most of those sciences, in the study of which we spend the best part of life, are improperly called sciences*; they have indeed some distant relation to our wants in this present state, but they have no reference at all to our real dignity. What relation to the real dignity of man hath the knowledge of languages, the arranging of various arbitrary and barbarous terms in the mind, to enable one to express one thing in a hundred different words? What relation to the real dignity of man hath the study of antiquity? Is it worthwhile to hold a thousand conferences, and to toil through a thousand volumes, for the sake of discovering the reveries of our ancestors?

5. In this world, we often see *real and useful knowledge deprived of its lustre*, through the supercilious neglect of mankind, and science falsely so called crowned with their applause. One man, whose mind is a kind of scientific chaos, full of vain speculations and confused ideas, shall be preferred before another, whose speculations have always been directed to form his judgment, to purify his ideas, and to bow his heart to truth and virtue. This partiality is often seen. Now, although it argues a narrowness of soul to make happiness depend on the opinion of others, yet it



is natural for intelligent beings, placed among other intelligent beings, to wish for that approbation which is due to real merit. Were the present life, of any long duration, were not the proximity of all-pursuing death a powerful consolation against all our inconveniences, these unjust estimations would be very mortifying.

Such being the imperfections, the defects, and the obstacles of our knowledge, we ought not to be surpris'd, if in general we do not comprehend the great influence, that the perfection of our faculty of thinking and knowing hath over our happiness. And yet even in this life, and with all these disadvantages, our knowledge, however difficult to acquire, however confin'd, uncertain, and partial, how little soever it may be applauded, contributes to our felicity. Even in this life, there is an extreme difference between a learned and an illiterate man; between him, whose knowledge of languages enables him (so to speak) to converse with people of all nations, and of all ages, and him, who can only converse with his own contemporary countrymen; between him, whose knowledge of history enables him to distinguish the successful from the hazardous, and to profit by the vices and the virtues of his predecessors, and him, who falls every day into mistakes inseparable from the want of experience; between him, whose own understanding weighs all in the balance of truth, and him, who every moment needs a guide to conduct him. Even in this life, a man collect'd within himself, sequestered from the rest of mankind, separated from an intercourse with all the living, deprived of all that constitutes the bliss of society, entomb'd, if the expression may be allowed, in a solitary closet, or in a dusty library, such a man enjoys an innocent pleasure, more satisfactory and refined than that, which places of diversion the most frequented, and sights the most superb, can afford.

But

But if, even in this life, learning and knowledge have so much influence over our happiness, what shall we enjoy, when our souls shall be freed from their slavery to the senses? What, when we are permitted to indulge to the utmost the pleasing desire of knowing? What felicity, when God shall unfold to our contemplation that boundless extent of truth and knowledge, which his intelligence revolves! What happiness will accompany our certain knowledge of the nature, the perfections, and the purposes of God! What pleasure will attend our discovery of the profound wisdom, the perfect equity, and the exact fitness of those events, which often surprised and offended us! Above all, what sublime delight must we enjoy, when we find our own interest connected with every truth, and all serve to demonstrate the reality, the duration, the inadmissibility of our happiness! How think you, my brethren; is not such a property beyond all valuation? Can the world indemnify us for the signal loss of it? If we have had the unhappiness to lose it, ought any thing to be accounted too great to be given for its recovery? And is not this expression of Jesus Christ, in this view of it, full of meaning and truth, *What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?*

What we have affirmed of the first property of our souls, that it is infinitely capable of contributing to our happiness, although we can never fully comprehend it on earth, we affirm of the other two properties, volition and sensibility.

The perfection of the will consists in a perfect harmony between the holiness and the plenitude of our desires. Now, to what degree soever we carry our holiness on earth, it is always mixed with imperfection. And, as our holiness is imperfect, our enjoyments must be so too. Moreover, as providence itself seems often to gratify an irregular will, we cannot well comprehend the

the

the misery of losing the soul in this respect. But judge of this loss, (and let one reflection suffice on this article) judge of this loss by this consideration. In that economy, into which our souls must enter, the Being, the most essentially holy, I mean God, is the most perfectly happy; and the most obstinately wicked being is the most completely miserable.

In like manner, we cannot well comprehend to what degree the property of our souls, that renders us susceptible of sensations, can be carried: How miserable soever the state of a man, exposed to heavy afflictions on earth, may be, a thousand causes lessen the weight of them. Sometimes reason assists the sufferer, and sometimes religion, sometimes a friend consoles, and sometimes a remedy relieves; and this thought at all times remains, death will shortly terminate all my ills. The same reflections may be made on sensations of pleasure, which are always mixed, suspended, and interrupted.

Nevertheless, the experience we have of our sensibility on earth, is sufficient to give us some just notions of the greatness of that loss, which a soul may sustain in this respect; nor is there any need to arouse our imaginations by images of an economy, of which we have no idea.

The most depraved of mankind, they, who are slaves to their senses, may comprehend the great misery of a state, in which the senses will be tormented, even better than a believer can, who usually studies to diminish the authority of sense, and to free his soul from its lawless sway.

Judge ye, then, of the loss of the soul, ye sensual minds, by this single consideration, if you have been insensible to all the rest. When we endeavoured to convince you of the greatness of this loss, by urging the privation of that knowledge, which the elect enjoy now, and which they hope to enjoy hereafter, you were not affected  
with

II. The *immortality* of a soul constitutes its dignity, and its endless duration is a source of demonstrations in favour of the proposition in the text. This dignity is incontestible. The principle of the immortality of the soul, from which we reason, is undeniable. Two suppositions may seem, at first sight, to weaken the evidence of the immortality of the soul. First, the close union of the soul to the body seems unfavourable to the doctrine of its immortality, and to predict its dissolution with the body. But this supposition, methinks, vanisheth, when we consider what a disproportion there is between the properties of the soul and those of the body. This disproportion proves, that they are two distinct substances. The separation of two distinct substances, makes indeed some change in the manner of their existing; but it can make none really in their existence.

But, whatever advantages we may derive from this reasoning, I freely acknowledge, that this, of all philosophical arguments for the immortality of the soul, the least of any affects me. The great question, on this article, is not what we think of our souls, when we consider them in themselves, independently on God, whose omnipotence surrounds and governs them. Could an infidel demonstrate, against us, that the human soul is material, and that therefore it must perish with the body; could we, on the contrary, demonstrate, against him, that the soul is immaterial, and that therefore it is not subject to laws of matter, and must survive the destruction of the body; neither side, in my opinion, would gain any thing considerable. The principal question, that, which alone ought to determine our notions on this article, would remain unexamined; that is, whether God will employ his power over our souls to perpetuate or to destroy them. For, could an infidel prove, that God would employ  
his

his power to annihilate our souls, in vain should we have demonstrated that they were naturally immortal; for we should be obliged to own, that they are mortal in respect of the will of that God, whose omnipotence rules them. In like manner, if we could prove to an unbeliever, that God would employ his power to preserve them in eternal existence, in vain would he have demonstrated, that considered in themselves they are mortal; and he would be obliged in his turn to allow that human souls are immortal, in virtue of the supreme power of God. Now, my brethren, the supposition, that God will employ his power to annihilate our souls, will entirely disappear, if you attend to the well-known and familiar argument of the connexion between the immortality of the soul, and that desire of immortality which the Creator hath imparted to it: What can we reply to a man who reasons in this manner?

I find myself in a world, where all things declare the perfections of the Creator. The more I consider all the parts, the more I admire the fitness of each to answer the end of him who created them all. Among numberless productions, perfectly correspondent to their destination, I find only one being, whose condition doth not seem to agree with that marvellous order, which I have observed in all the rest. This being is my own soul. And what is this soul of mine? Is it fire? Is it air? Is it ethereal matter? Under whatever notions I consider it, I am at a loss to define it. However, notwithstanding this obscurity, I do perceive enough of its nature to convince me of a great disproportion between the present state of my soul, and that end for which its Creator seems to have formed it. This soul, I know, I feel, (and, of all arguments, there are none more convincing than those that are taken from sentiment) this soul is a being eagerly bent on the enjoyment of a happiness infinite in its duration.

duration. Should any one offer me a state of perfect happiness, that would continue ten thousand years, an assemblage of reputation and riches, grandeur and magnificence, perhaps, dazzled with its glare, I might cede my pretensions in consideration of this enjoyment. But, after all, I fully perceive, that this felicity, how long, and how perfect soever it might be, would be inadequate to my wishes. Ten thousand years are too few to gratify my desires; my desires leap the bounds of all fixed periods of duration, and roll along a boundless eternity. What is not eternal is unequal to my wishes, eternity only can satisfy them.

Such is my soul. But where is it lodged? Its place is the ground of my astonishment. This soul, this subject of so many desires, inhabits a world of vanity and nothingness. Whether I climb the highest eminences, or pry into the deepest indigence, I can discover no object capable of filling my capacious desires. I ascend the thrones of sovereigns, I descend into the beggar's dust; I walk the palaces of princes, I lodge in the peasant's cabin; I retire into the closet to be wise, I avoid recollection, choose ignorance, and increase the crowd of idiots; I live in solitude, I rush into the social multitude; but every where I find a mortifying void. In all these places there is nothing satisfactory. In each I am more unhappy, through the desire of seeing new objects, than satisfied with the enjoyment of what I possess. At most, I experience nothing in all these pleasures, which my concupiscence multiplies, but a mean of rendering my condition tolerable, not a mean of making it perfectly happy.

How can I reconcile these things? How can I make the Creator agree with himself? There is one way of doing this, a singular, but a certain way: a way, that solves all difficulties, and covers

covers infidelity with confusion ; a way, that teacheth me what I am, whence I came, and for what my Creator hath designed me. Although God hath placed me in this world, yet he doth not design to limit my prospects to it ; though he hath mixed me with more animals, yet he doth not intend to confound me with them ; though he hath lodged my soul in a frail perishable body, yet he doth not mean to involve it in the dissolution of this frame. Without supposing immortality, that, which constitutes the dignity of man, makes his misery. These desires of immortal duration, this faculty of thinking and reflecting, of expanding and perpetuating the mind ; this superiority of soul, that seems to elevate mankind above beasts, actually place the beast above the man, and fill him with these bitter reflections full of mortification and pain. Ye crawling reptiles ! ye beasts of the field ! destitute of intelligence and reason ! if my soul be not immortal, I envy your condition. Content with your own organs, pleased with ranging the fields and browsing the herbage, your desires need no restraint ; for all your wishes are fully satisfied. While I, abounding on the one hand with insatiable desires, and on the other confined amidst vain and unsatisfactory objects, I am on this account unhappy !

We repeat these philosophical reasonings, my brethren, only for the sake of convincing you, that we are in possession of immense advantages over sceptics in this dispute. On the principles of an unbeliever, you see, were his notion of revelation well-grounded ; were the sacred book, in which so many characters of truth shine, an human production ; were a reasonable man obliged to admit no other propositions than those, which have been allowed at the tribunal of right reason ; yet, we say more, were our souls material, we ought, on the suppositions before mentioned,

to admit the immortality of the soul as most conformable to our best notions of the will of our Creator.

But, when we are thus convinced of our immortality, need we any new arguments to demonstrate the proposition included in the text, *What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?* Most subjects may be made to appear with greater or less dignity, according to the greater or smaller degree of importance, in which the preacher places it: Pompous expressions, bold figures, lively images, ornaments of eloquence, may often supply a want of dignity in the subject discussed, or a want of proper dispositions in auditors, who attend the discussion of it. But, in my opinion, every attempt to give importance to a motive taken from eternity, is more likely to enfeeble the doctrine than to invigorate it. Motives of this kind are self-sufficient. Descriptions the most simple, and the most natural, that can be made, are always, I think, the most pathetic, and the most terrifying; nor can I find an expression, on this article, more eloquent and more emphatical than this of St. Paul, *The things which are seen, are temporal; but the things which are not seen, are eternal,* 2 Cor. iv. 18. Were the possession of the whole world the price you ask, in exchange for your souls; were the whole world free from those characters of vanity, which open such a boundless field to our reflections; would there not always be this disproportion between a perishing world and a soul aspiring at felicity, that the world would end and the soul would never die?

Death puts an end to the most specious titles, to the most dazzling grandeur, and to the most delicious life; and the thought of this period of human glory reminds me of the memorable action of a prince, who, although he was a heathen, was wiser than many christians; I mean the great Saladin.



Saladin. After he had subdued Egypt, passed the Euphrates, and conquered cities without number; after he had retaken Jerusalem, and performed exploits more than human, in those wars, which superstition had stirred up for the recovery of the holy land; he finished his life in the performance of an action, that ought to be transmitted to the most distant posterity. A moment before he uttered his last sigh, he called the herald, who had carried his banner before him in all his battles, he commanded him to fasten to the top of a lance, the shroud, in which the dying prince was soon to be buried. Go, said he, carry this lance, unfurl this banner, and, while you lift up this standard, proclaim, *This, this is all, that remains to Saladin the great, the conqueror and the king of the empire, of all his glory.\** Christians! I perform to-day the office of this herald. I fasten to the top of a spear, sensual and intellectual pleasures, worldly riches, and human honours. All these I reduce to the piece of crape, in which you will shortly be buried. This standard of death I lift up in your sight, and I cry, *This, this is all, that will remain to you, of the possessions for which you exchanged your souls.* Are such possessions too great to be given in exchange for such a soul? Can the idea of their perishing nature prevail over the idea of the immortality of the soul? And do you not feel the truth of the text, *What shall a man, a rational man, a man who is capable of comparing eternity with time, what shall such a man give in exchange for his soul?*

Finally, we make a reflection of another kind, to convince you of the dignity of your souls, and to persuade you, that nothing can be too valuable to be given in exchange for them. This is taken from the astonishing works, that God hath performed

\* Maimb. Hist. des Croisades, lib. vi. p. 572. de l'Edit. in 4.

performed in their favour. We will confine ourselves to one article, to the ineffimable price, that God hath given for the redemption of them. Hear these words of the holy Scriptures, *You are bought with a price. You were redeemed from your vain conversation, not with corruptible things, as silver and gold; but with the precious blood of Christ,* 1 Cor. vi. 20. 1 Pet. i. 18.

Some of you, perhaps, may say, as the limits of a sermon will not allow us to speak of more than one of the wondrous works of God in favour of immortal souls, we ought, at least, to choose that, which is most likely to affect an audience, and not to dwell on a subject, which, having been so often repeated, will make only slight impressions on their minds. Perhaps, were we to inform you, that, in order to save your souls, God had subverted formerly all the laws of nature, or, to use the language of a prophet, that he had *shaken the heavens and the earth, the sea and the dry land,* Hag. ii. 6, perhaps, were we to tell you, that, in order to save your souls, God deferred the end of the world, and put off the last vicissitudes, that are to put a period to the duration of this universe; that, according to St. Peter, *the Lord is long-suffering to us-ward,* 2 Pet. iii. 9, perhaps, were we to affirm, that, in order to save our souls, he will come one day on the clouds of heaven, sitting on a throne, surrounded with glorious angels, accompanied with myriads of shouting voices, to deliver them with the greater pomp, and to save them with more splendour: perhaps, by relating all these mighty works done for our souls, we might excite in you ideas of their dignity, more lively than that, which we have chosen, and to which we intend to confine our attention. But, surmount, if you can, your customary indolence, and form an adequate idea of the dignity of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, in order the better to judge of the dignity  
of

of those souls, of which his blood was the price.

Go, learn it in heaven. Behold the Deity. Approach his throne. Observe the *thousand thousands ministering unto him, ten thousand times ten thousand standing before him*, Dan. vii. 10. See his eyes sparkling with fire, and his majesty and glory filling his sanctuary, and, by the dignity of the victim sacrificed, judge of the value of the sacrifice.

Go, study it in all the economies, that preceded this sacrifice. Observe the types, which prefigured it; the shadows, that traced it out; the ceremonies, which depicted it; and, by the pomp of the preparations, judge of the dignity of the substance prepared.

Go, learn it on mount Calvary. Behold the wrath, that fell on the head of Jesus Christ. Behold his blood pouring out upon the earth, and him, your Saviour, drinking the bitter cup of divine displeasure. See his hands and his feet nailed to the cross, and his whole body one great wound; observe the unbridled populace foaming with rage around the cross, and glutting their savage souls with his barbarous sufferings; and, by the horror of the causes that contributed to his death, judge of the death itself.

Go to the infidel, and let him teach you the dignity of the sacrifice of Christ. Remember, on this account he attacks christianity, and he hath some shew of reason for doing so; for if this religion may be attacked on any side, with the least hope of success, it is on this. The truths of the christian religion are incontestible; but if there be any one article of the gospel, which requires an entire docility of mind, an absolute submission of heart, a perfect deference to God, who speaks, it is the article of the sacrifice of the cross. Weigh the objections, and by the greatness of the difficulties judge of the dignity of the mystery.

Recollect,

Recollect, christian ! God thought fit to require the blood of his Son for the redemption of our souls. These souls must have been very precious in the sight of God, since he redeemed them at a price so immense. The misery into which they were liable to be plunged, must have been extremely terrible, since God thought proper to make such great efforts to save them from it. The felicity, of which they are capable, and to which the Lord intends to elevate them, must be infinitely valuable, since it cost him so much to bring them to it. For what in the universe is of equal value with the blood of the Son of God ? Disappear, all ye other miracles, wrought in favour of our souls ! ye astonishing prodigies, that confirmed the gospel ! thou, delay of the consummation of all things ! ye great and terrible signs of the second coming of the Son of God ! Vanish before the miracle of the cross ; for the cross shines you all into darkness and shade. This glorious light makes your glimmering vanish ; and after my imagination is filled with the tremendous dignity of this sacrifice, I can see nothing great beside. But, if God, if this just appraiser of things, hath estimated our souls at such a rate, shall we set a low price on them ? If he hath given so much for them, do we imagine we can give too much for them ? If, for their redemption, he hath sacrificed the most valuable person in heaven, do we imagine there is any thing upon earth too great to give up for them ?

No, no, my brethren ! after what we have heard, we ought to believe, that there is no shadow of exaggeration in this exclamation of Jesus Christ, *What is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul ?* I do not certainly know what our Saviour meant to say ; whether he intended to speak of a man, who should gain the whole world, and instantly lose

lose his soul; or of one, who should not lose his soul till long after he had obtained the whole world, and had reigned over it through the course of a long life. But I do know, that the words are true, even in the most extensive sense. Suppose a man, who should not only enjoy universal empire for one whole age, but for a period equal to the duration of the world itself; the proposition, that is implied in the words of Jesus Christ, is applicable to him. Such a soul as we have described, a soul so excellent in its nature, so extensive in its duration, so precious through its redemption; a soul capable of acquiring so much knowledge, of conceiving so many desires, of experiencing so much remorse, of feeling so many pleasures and pains; a soul, that must subsist beyond all time, and perpetuate itself to eternity; a soul redeemed by the blood of the Son of God; a soul so valuable ought to be preferred before all things, and nothing is too precious to be given for its exchange. "What is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or, what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?"

However, my brethren, we are willing to acknowledge, were we in the case supposed by Jesus Christ; were it in our power to gain the whole world by losing our own souls; or, being actually universal monarchs, were we obliged to sacrifice this vast empire to recover our souls already lost; were we, being smitten with the splendid offer, or being alarmed at the immense price of our purchase, to prefer the whole world before our own souls; we might then, if not exculpate our conduct, yet at least give a little colour to it; if we could not gain our cause, we might however plead it with some shew of reason. A reason of state, a political motive, as that of governing a whole universe, would naturally have some influence over us. The titles of Sovereign,

Sovereign, Monarch, Emperor, would naturally charm little souls, like ours. Sumptuous palaces, superb equipages, a crowd of devoted courtiers, bowing and cringing before us, and all that exterior grandeur which environs the princes of the earth, would naturally fascinate such feeble eyes, and infatuate such puerile imaginations as ours. I repeat it again, could we obtain the government of the universe by the sale of our souls, if we could not justify our conduct, we might extenuate the guilt of it; and although we could not gain our cause, we might at least plead it with some shew of reason.

But is this our case? Is it in our power to gain the whole world? Is this the price, at which we sell our souls? O shame of human nature! O meanness of soul, more proper to confound us, than any thing else, with which we can be reproached! This intelligent soul, this immortal soul, this soul which has been thought worthy of redemption by the blood of the Saviour of the world, this soul we often part with for nothing, and for less than nothing! In our condition, placed as most of us are, in a state of mediocrity; when by dissipation and indolence, by injustice and iniquity, by malice and obstinacy, we shall have procured from vice all the rewards that we can expect, what shall we have gained? Cities? Provinces? Kingdoms? A long and prosperous reign? God hath not left these to our choice. His love would not suffer him to expose us to a temptation so violent. Accordingly we put up our souls at a lower price. See this old man, rather dead than alive, bowing under his age, flopping down, and stepping into the grave; at what price does he exchange his soul? at the price of a few days of a dying life; a few pleasures, smothered under a pile of years, if I may speak so, or buried under the ice of old age. That officer in the army, who thinks he alone understands

understands real grandeur; at what rate does he value his soul? He loses it for the sake of the false glory of swearing expertly, and of uniting blasphemy and politeness. What does your mechanic get for his soul? One acre of land, a cottage bigger and less inconvenient than that of his neighbour.

Unmanly wretches! If we be bent on renouncing our dignity, let us, however, keep up some appearance of greatness. Sordid souls! if we will resign our noblest pretensions, let us do it, however, in favour of some other pretensions, that are real. "Be astonished, O ye heavens, at this! and be ye horribly afraid; for my people have committed two evils: they have forsaken me, the fountain of living waters, and have hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water," Jer. ii. 12. Do you perceive, my brethren, the force of this complaint, which God anciently uttered over his people the Jews, and which he now utters over us? Neither genius nor erudition can explain it. Could they, you might perhaps understand it. A certain elevation, a certain dignity of soul, singular sentiments of heart, are the only expositors of these affecting words. Therefore, I fear, they are unintelligible to most of you. "Be astonished, O ye heavens, at this! and be ye horribly afraid; for my people have committed two evils: they have forsaken me, the fountain of living waters, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water." God loves us, he desires we should love him. He has done every thing to conciliate our esteem. For us he sent his Son into the world. For us he disarmed death. For us he opened an easy path to a glorious eternity. And all this, to render himself master of our hearts, and to engage us to return him love for love, life for life. We resist all these attractives, we prefer other objects before him.

No matter, he would pass this ingratitude, if the objects, which we prefer before him, were capable of making us happy; if, at least, they bore any apparent proportion to those, which he offereth to our hopes. But what arouseth his displeasure, what provokes his just indignation, what excites reproaches, that would cleave our hearts asunder, were they capable of feeling, is the vanity of the objects, which we prefer before him. The soul, in exchange for which the whole world would not be a sufficient consideration, this soul we often give for the most mean, the most vile, the most contemptible part of the world. "O ye heavens! be astonished at this, at this be ye horribly afraid; for my people have committed two evils: they have forsaken me, the fountain of the living waters, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water."

But do we know, ungrateful that we are, do we know, that if the hardness of our hearts prevent our feeling in particular the energy of this reproof, and in general the evidence of the reflections, that make the substance of this discourse; do we know that a day will come, when we shall feel them in all their force? Do we know, that there is now a place, where the truth of our text appears in a clear but a terrible light? Yes, my brethren, this reflection is perhaps essential to our discourse, this perhaps approaches nearest to the meaning of Jesus Christ; perhaps Jesus Christ, in these words, *What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?* meant to inform us of the disposition of a man in despair, who, immersed in all the miseries that can excruciate a soul, surprised at having parted with such a soul at a price so small, stricken with the enormous crime of losing it, wishes, but too late, to give every thing to recover it.

Ideas, like these, we never propose to you without reluctance. Motives of another kind should



should suffice for christians. Learn the worth of your souls. Enter into the plan of your Creator, who created them capable of eternal felicity ; and into that of your Redeemer, who died to enable you to arrive at it. Against all the deceitful promises, which the world, the flesh, and the devil, use to seduce you, oppose these words of Jesus Christ, *What is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or, what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?* May God inspire you with these noble sentiments! To him be honour and glory for ever.—Amen.

---

## SERMON VI.

---

### THE BIRTH OF JESUS CHRIST.

ISAIAH ix. 6, 7.

*Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given : and the government shall be upon his shoulder ; and his name shall be called, Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it, with judgment and with justice, from henceforth even for ever.*

**I** ANTICIPATE the festival, which the goodness, or rather the magnificence of God, invites you to celebrate on Wednesday next. All nature seems to take part in the memorable event, which on that day we shall commemorate, I mean the birth of the Saviour of the world. Herod turns pale on his throne ; the devils tremble in hell ; the wise men of the east suspend all their speculations, and observe no sign in the firmament, except that which conducts them to the place where lies the incarnate Word, *God manifest in the flesh*, 1 Tim. iii. 16. an angel from heaven is the herald of the astonishing event, and tells the Shepherds, *Behold I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people, for unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord*, Luke ii. 10, 11. the multitude of the heavenly host eagerly descend to congratulate men on the Word's assumption of mortal flesh, on his dwelling among men, in order to enable them to behold his glory, the glory of the only begotten of the Father, full  
of

of grace and truth, John i. 14: they make the air resound with these acclamations, *Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will to-ward men*, Luke ii. 14.

What think ye? Does this festival require no preparation of you? Do you imagine, that you shall celebrate it as you ought, if you content yourselves with attending on a few discourses, during which, perhaps, while you are present in body, you may be absent in spirit; or with laying aside your temporal cares, and your most turbulent passions, at the church-gates, in order to take them up again, as soon as divine service ends? The king-Messiah is about to make his triumphant entry among you. With what pomp do *the children of this world*, who are wise, and, we may add, magnificent in *their generation*, Luke xvi. 8. celebrate the entries of their princes? They strew the roads with flowers, they raise triumphal arches, they express their joy in shouts of victory, and in songs of praise. Come, then, my brethren, let us to-day prepare the way of the Lord, and make his paths straight, Matt. iii. 3: let us be joyful together before the Lord, let us make a joyful noise before the Lord the King, for he cometh to judge the earth, Psal. xcvi. 6, 9. or, to speak in a more intelligible, and in a more evangelical manner, Come, ye miserable sinners, loaded with the unsupportable burden of your sins; come, ye troubled consciences, uneasy at the remembrance of your many idle words, many criminal thoughts, many abominable actions; come, ye poor mortals, tossed with tempests and not comforted, Isa. liv. 11. condemned first to bear the infirmities of nature, the caprices of society, the vicissitudes of age, the turns of fortune, and then the horrors of death, and the frightful night of the tomb; come, behold *The Wonderful, The Counsellor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace*; take him into your  
 N. 2 arms,

arms, learn to desire nothing more, when you possess him. May God enable each of you, in transports of joy, to say, *Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, for mine eyes have seen thy salvation.* Amen.

You have heard the prophecy, on which our meditations in this discourse are to turn. "Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given; and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called, Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it, with judgment and with justice, from henceforth even for ever." These words are more dazzling than clear: let us fix their true meaning; and, in order to ascertain that, let us divide this discourse into two parts,

I. Let us explain the prediction.

II. Let us shew its accomplishment.

In the first part, we will prove, that the prophet had the Messiah in view; and, in the second, that our Jesus had fully answered the design of the prophet, and hath accomplished, in the most just and sublime of all senses, the whole prediction: *Unto us a child is born*, and so on.

I. Let us explain the prophet's prediction, and let us fix on the extraordinary child, to whom he gives the magnificent titles in the text. Indeed, the grandeur of the titles sufficiently determines the meaning of the prophet; for to whom, except to the Messiah, can these appellations belong, *The Wonderful, The Counsellor, The mighty God, The Prince of Peace, The everlasting Father*? This natural sense of the text, is supported by the authority of an inspired writer, and what is, if not of any great weight in point of argument, at least, very singular as an historical fact, it is supported by the authority of an angel.

gel. The inspired writer, whom we mean, is St. Matthew, who manifestly alludes to the words of the text, by quoting those which precede them, which are connected with them, and which he applies to the times of the Messiah: for, having related the imprisonment of John, and, in consequence of that, the retiring of Jesus Christ into Galilee, he adds, that the divine Saviour *came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea-coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: the people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up*, Matt. iv. 12. The angel, of whom I spoke, is Gabriel; who, when he declared to Mary the choice which God had made of her to be the mother of the Messiah, applied to her Son the characters, by which Isaiah describes the child in the text, and paints him in the same colours: *Thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever: and of his kingdom there shall be no end*, Luke i. 31, &c.

How conclusive soever these proofs may appear in favor of the sense we have given of the prophecy, they do not satisfy this intractable age, which is always ready to embrace any thing that seems likely to enervate the truths of religion. Sincerity requires us to acknowledge, that although our prophecy is clear of itself, yet there ariseth some obscurity from the order in which it is placed, and from its connection with the foregoing and following verses. On each we will endeavor

endeavor to throw some light, and for this purpose, we will go back, and analyse this, and the two preceding chapters.

When Isaiah delivered this prophecy, Ahaz reigned over the kingdom of Judah, and Pekah, the son of Remaliab, over that of Israel. You cannot be ignorant of the mutual jealousy of these two kingdoms. There is often more hatred between two parties, whose religion is almost the same, than between those whose doctrines are in direct opposition. Each considers the other as near the truth: each is jealous lest the other should obtain it: and, it is more likely that they, who hold the essential truths of religion, should surpass others sooner than they, who raze the very foundations of it, the former are greater objects of envy than the latter. The kingdoms of Israel and Judah were often more envenomed against one another than against foreigners. This was the case in the reign of Ahaz, king of Judah. Pekah, king of Israel, to the shame of the ten tribes, discovered a disposition like that, which hath sometimes made the christian world blush; I mean, that a Prince, who worshipped the true God, in order to destroy his brethren, made an alliance with an idolater. He allied himself to Rezin, a pagan Prince, who reigned over that part of Syria, which constituted the kingdom of Damascus. The kingdom of Judah had often yielded to the forces of these kings, even when each had separately made war with it. Now they were united; and intended jointly to fall on the Jews, and to overwhelm, rather than to besiege Jerusalem. Accordingly, the consternation was so great in the holy city, that, the scripture says, *The heart of Ahaz was moved, and the heart of his people, as the trees of the wood are moved with the wind, Isa. vii. 2.*

Although the kingdom of Judah had too well deserved the punishments, which threatened it;  
and

and although a thousand outrages, with which the inhabitants had insulted the Majesty of heaven, seemed to guarantee their country to the enemy, yet God came to their assistance. He was touched, if not with the sincerity of their repentance, at least with the excess of their miseries. He commanded Isaiah to encourage their hopes. He even promised them, not only that all the designs of their enemies should be rendered abortive: but that the two confederate kingdoms, *within three score and five years*, ver. 8. should be entirely destroyed. Moreover, he gave Ahaz the choice of a sign to convince himself of the truth of the promise. Ahaz was one of the most wicked kings, that ever sat on the throne of Judah: so that the Scripture could give no worse character of this prince, nor describe his perseverance in sin more fully, than by saying, that *he was always Ahaz*.\* He refused to choose a sign, not because he felt one of those noble emotions, which makes a man submit to the testimony of God without any more proof of its truth than the testimony itself; but because he was inclined to infidelity and ingratitude, and, probably, because he trusted in his ally, the king of Assyria. Notwithstanding his refusal, God gave him signs, and informed him, that before the prophet's two children, one of whom was already born, and the other would be born shortly, should arrive at years of discretion, the two confederate kings should retreat from Judea, and should be entirely destroyed.

Of the first child, see what the seventh chapter of the Revelations of our prophet says. We are there told, that this son of the prophet was named Shearjashub, that is, *the remnant shall return*, ver. 3. a name expressive of the meaning of

\* 2 Chron. xxviii. 22. *This is that king Ahaz.* Eng. Version. *C'estoit toujours le roi Achaz.* Fr. *Idem erat rex Achaz.* Jun. Tremel.

of the sign, which declared that the Jews should return from their rebellions; and that God would return from his anger. The other child, then unborn, is mentioned in the eighth chapter, where it is said *the prophetess bare a son*, ver. 3.

God commanded the prophet to take the first child, and to carry him to that pool, or piece of water, which was formed by the waters of Siloah, which supplied the stream known by the name of *The fuller's conduit*, 2 Kings xviii. 17. and which was at the foot of the eastern wall of Jerusalem. The prophet was ordered to produce the child in the presence of all the affrighted people, and to say to them, *Before this child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good; the land that thou abhorrest, shall be forsaken of both her kings*, Isa. vii. 16. If this translation be retained, *the land* signifies the kingdom of Israel, and that of Syria, from which the enemy came, and which, on account of their coming, the Jews *abhorred*: I should rather render the words, *the land, for which thou art afraid*; and by *the land* understand Judea, which was then in a very dangerous state. But the prophecy began to be accomplished in both senses about a year after it was uttered. Tiglath Pileser, king of Assyria, not only drew off the forces of Rezin and Pekah, from the siege of Jerusalem, but he drove them also from their own countries. He first attacked Damascus. Rezin quitted his intended conquest, and returned to defend his capital, where he was slain; and all his people were carried into captivity, 2 Kings xvi. 9. Tiglath Pileser then marched into the kingdom of Israel, and victory marched along with him at the head of his army. 1 Chron. v. 26. He subdued the tribes of Reuben and Gad, and the half tribe of Manasseh, all the inhabitants of Galilee, and the tribe of Nephthaliim, and carried them captives beyond Euphrates; and sixty five years after, that is, sixty  
five



Five years after the prediction of the total ruin of the kingdom of Israel by the prophet Amos, the prophecy was fulfilled by Salmanassar, chap. vii. 11. according to the language of our prophet, *within three score and five years shall Ephraim be broken, that it be not a people, Isa. vii. 8.* Thus was this prophecy accomplished, *before this child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land, for which thou art afraid, shall be forsaken of both her kings.*

God determined that the prophet's second child should also be a sign of the truth of the same promise. He assured Isaiah, that before the child, who should shortly be born, could learn to articulate the first sounds which children were taught to pronounce; "before the child should have knowledge to cry, My father, and my mother, the riches of Damascus, and the spoil of Samaria," that is, of the kingdom of Israel, "should be taken away by the king of Assyria," chap. viii. 4. This is the same promise confirmed by a second sign. God usually giveth more than one, when he confirmeth any very interesting prediction, as we see in the history of Pharaoh, and the patriarch Joseph, Gen. xli. 1, &c.

But, as all the mercies that were bestowed on the Jews from the time of Abraham, were grounded on the covenant, which God had made with that patriarch, their common father and head; or rather, as, since the fall, men could expect no favor of God but in virtue of the mediator of the church; it is generally to be observed in the prophecies, that when God gave them a promise, he directed their attention to this grand object. Either the idea of the covenant, or the idea of the mediator, was a seal, which God put to his promises, and a bar against the unbelief and distrust of his people. Every thing might be expected from a God, whose goodness was so infinite,

nite, as to prepare such a noble victim for the salvation of mankind. He, who would confine Satan in everlasting chains, and vanquish sin and death, was fully able to deliver his people from the incursions of Rezin, and Pekah, the son of Remaliah. To remove the present fears of the Jews, God reminds them of the wonders of his love, which he had promised to display in favor of his church, in ages to come: and commands his prophet to say to them, "Ye trembling leaves of the wood, shaken with every wind, peace be to you! Ye timorous Jews, cease your fears! let not the greatness of this temporal deliverance, which I now promise you, excite your doubts! God hath favors incomparably greater in store for you, they shall be your guarantees for those, which ye are afraid to expect. Ye are in covenant with God. Ye have a right to expect those displays of his love in your favor which are least credible. Remember the *blessed seed*, which he promised to your ancestors, Gen. xxii. 18. "Behold! a virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel," Isa. vii. 14. The spirit of prophecy, that animates me, enables me to penetrate through all the ages that separate the present moment from that in which the promise shall be fulfilled. I see the divine child, my "faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen," Heb. xi. 1. and grounded on the word of that God, *who changeth not*, Mal. iii. 6. who "is not a man, that he should lie, neither the son of man, that he should repent," Numb. iii. 19. I dare speak of a miracle, which will be wrought eight hundred years hence, as if it had been wrought to-day, "Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called, Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace."

This;

This, my brethren, is the prophet's scope in the three chapters which we have analysed, and particularly in the text. But, if any one of you receive our exposition without any farther discussion, he will discover more doctility than we require, and he would betray his credulity without proving his conviction. How often doth a commentator substitute his own opinions for those of his author, and by forging, if I may be allowed to speak so, a new text, elude the difficulties of that which he ought to explain? Let us act more ingeniously. There are two difficulties, which attend our comment; one is a particular, the other is a general difficulty.

The *particular* difficulty is this. We have supposed, that the mysterious child, spoken of in our text, is the same, of whom the prophet speaks, when he says, "A virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel:" and that this child is different from that, whom Isaiah gave for a sign of the present temporal deliverance, and of whom it is said, "before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land, that thou abhorrest, shall be forsaken of both her kings." This supposition does not seem to agree with the text; read the following verses, which are taken from the seventh chapter. "Behold! a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel: Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may know to refuse the evil, and choose the good. But before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land, that thou abhorrest, shall be forsaken of both her kings," ver. 14, 15, 16. Do not the last words, "before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good," seem to belong to the words which immediately precede them, "Behold! a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son?" *Immanuel*, then, who was to be born of a *virgin*, could not be the *Messiah*;

the prophet must mean the child, of whom he said, *before he know to refuse the evil, and choose the good*, Judea shall be delivered, from the two confederate kings.

How intelligible becomes this objection, may appear, it is only an apparent difficulty, and it lies less in the nature of the thing, than in the arrangement of the terms. Represent to yourselves the prophet executing the order, which God had given him, as the third verse of the seventh chapter, relates. "Go forth now to meet Ahaz, thou, and Shearjashub thy son, at the end of the conduit of the upper pool." Imagine Isaiah, in the presence of the Jews, holding his son Shearjashub in his arms, and addressing them in this manner: The token, that God gives you, of your present deliverance, that he is still your God, and that ye are still his covenant people, is the renewal of the promise to you, which he made to your ancestors concerning the Messiah: to convince you of the truth of what I assert, I discharge my commission, "Behold! a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel;" that is, *God with us*: He shall be brought up like the children of men, "butter and honey shall he eat, until he know to refuse the evil, and choose the good," that is, until he arrive at years of maturity. In virtue of this promise, which will not be ratified, till some ages have expired, behold what I promise you now: *before the child*, not before the child, whom I said just now, *a virgin should bear*: but before the child in my arms, (the phrase may be rendered *before this child*) before Shearjashub, whom I now lift up, "shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land, for which ye are in trouble, shall be forsaken of both her kings." You see, my brethren, *the child*, whom the prophet said, *a virgin should conceive*, could not be Shearjashub, who was actually present in his father's

father's arms. The difficulty, therefore, is only apparent, and, as I observed before, it lay in the arrangement of the terms, and not in the nature of the thing. This is our answer to what I called a particular difficulty.

A general objection may be made against the manner in which we have explained these chapters, and in which, in general, we explain other prophecies. Allow me to state this objection in all its force, and, if I may use the expression, in all its enormity, in order to shew you, in the end, all its levity and folly.

The obvious objection is this. An unbeliever would say, the three chapters of Isaiah, of which you have given an arbitrary analysis, are equivocal and obscure, like the greatest part of those compositions, which compose the book of the visionary flights of this prophet; and like all the writings, that are called *predictions*, *prophecies*, *revelations*. Obscurity is the grand character of them, even in the opinion of those who have given sublime and curious explanations of them. They are capable of several senses. Who hath received authority to develop those ambiguous writings, to determine the true meaning, among the many different ideas, which they excite in the reader, and to each of which the terms are alike applicable? During seventeen centuries, christians have racked their invention to put a sense on the writings of the prophets advantageous to christianity, and the greatest geniuses have endeavored to interpret them in favor of the christian religion. Men, who have been famous for their erudition and knowledge, have taken the most laborious pains to methodize these writings; and one generation of great men hath succeeded another in the undertaking; is it astonishing, that some degree of success hath attended their labors, and that by dint of indefatigable industry, they have rendered those prophecies venerable, which would.

would have been accounted dark and void of design, if less pains had been taken to adapt a design, and less violence had been used in arranging them in order?

This is the objection in all its force, and, as I said before, in all its enormity. Let us inquire whether we can give a solution proportional to this boasted objection of infidelity. Our answer will be comprised in a chain of propositions, which will guard you against those, who find mystical meanings, where there are none, as well as against those, who disown them, where they are. To these purposes attend to the following propositions.

1. They were not the men of our age, who forged the book, in which we imagine, we discover such profound knowledge : we know it is a book of the most venerable antiquity, and we can demonstrate that it is the most ancient book in the world.

2. This venerable antiquity, however, is not the chief ground of our admiration : the benevolence of its design ; the grandeur of its ideas ; the sublimity of its doctrines ; the holiness of its precepts ; are, according to our notion of things, if not absolute proofs of its divinity, at least, advantageous presumptions in its favor.

3. Among divers truths which it contains, and which, it may be supposed, some superior geniuses might have discovered, I meet with some, the attainment of which I cannot reasonably attribute to the human mind : of this kind are some predictions, obscure, I grant, to those to whom they were first delivered, but rendered very clear since by the events. Such are these two among many others. The people, who are in covenant with God, shall be excluded ; and people, who are not, shall be admitted. I see the accomplishment of these predictions with my own eyes, in the rejection of the Jews, and in the calling of the Gentiles.

4. The

4. The superior characters, which signalize these books, give them the right of being mysterious in some places, without exposing them to the charge of being equivocal, or void of meaning; for some works have acquired this right. When an author hath given full proof of his capacity in some propositions, which are clear and intelligible; and when he expresseth himself, in other places, in a manner obscure, and hard to be understood, he is not to be taxed, all on a sudden, with writing irrationally. A meaning is to be sought in his expressions. It is not to be supposed, that geniuses of the highest order sink at once beneath the lowest minds. Why do we not entertain such notions of our prophets? Why is not the same justice due to the extraordinary men, whose respectable writings we are pleading for; to our Isaias, and Jeremiahs, which is allowed to Juvenal and Virgil? What! shall some pretty thought of the latter, shall some ingenious stroke of the former, conciliate more respect to them, than the noble sentiments of God, the sublime doctrines, and the virtuous precepts of the holy scriptures, can obtain for the writers of the bible?

5. We do not pretend, however, to abuse that respect, which it would be unjust to withhold from our authors. We do not pretend to say that every obscure passage contains a mystery, or that, whenever a passage appears unintelligible, we have a right to explain it in favor of the doctrine, which we profess: but we think it right to consider any passage in these books prophetic, when it has the three following marks.

The first is *the insufficiency of the literal meaning*. I mean, a text must be accounted prophetic, when it cannot be applied, without offering violence to the language, to any event, that fell out when it was spoken, or to any then present, or past object.

2. The second character of a prophecy, is an *infallible commentary*. I mean, when an author of acknowledged authority, gives a prophetic sense to a passage under consideration, we ought to submit to his authority, and adopt his meaning.

3. The last character is a *perfect conformity between the prediction and the event*. I mean, when prophecies, compared with events, appear to have been completely accomplished, several ages after they had been promulgated, it cannot be fairly urged that the conformity was a lucky hit : but, it ought to be acknowledged, that the prophecy proceeded from God, who, being alone capable of foreseeing what would happen, was alone capable of foretelling the event, in a manner so circumstantial and exact. All these characters unite in favor of the text, which we have been explaining, and in favor of the three chapters, which we have, in general, expounded.

The first character, that is, the insufficiency of a literal sense, agrees with our explication. Let any event, in the time of Isaiah, be named, any child born then, or soon after, of whom the prophet could reasonably affirm what he does in our text, and in the other verse, which we have connected with it. "A virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given ; and the government shall be upon his shoulder : and his name shall be called, Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace."

The second distinguishing mark, that is, an infallible commentary, agrees with our explication. Our evangelists and apostles, those venerable men, whose mission comes recommended to us by the most glorious miracles, by the healing of the sick, by the expulsion of demons, by the raising of the dead, by a general subversion of all nature,



ture, our evangelists and apostles took these passages in the same sense, in which we take them, they understood them of the Messiah, as we have observed before.

The third character, that is, a perfect conformity between event and prediction, agrees also with our explication. We actually find a child, some ages after the time of Isaiah, who exactly answers the description of him, of whom the prophet spoke. The features are similar, and we own the likeness. Our Jesus was really born of a virgin; he was truly *Inmanuel*, *God with us*: in him are really united, all the titles, and all the perfections, of the "Wonderful, The Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father;" as we will presently prove. Can we help giving a mysterious meaning to these passages? Can we refuse to acknowledge, that the prophet intended to speak of the Messiah? These are the steps, and this is the end of our meditation in favor of the mystical sense, which we have ascribed to the words of the text.

Would to God, the enemies of our mysteries would open their eyes to these objects, and examine the weight of these arguments! Would to God, a love, I had almost said a rage, for independency, for a system that indulges, and inflames the passions, had not put some people on opposing these proofs! Infidelity and scepticism would have made less havoc among us, and would not have decoyed away so many disciples from truth and virtue! And would to God also, christian ministers would never attempt to attack the systems of infidels and sceptics without the armour of demonstration! Would to God, love of the marvellous may no more dazzle the imaginations of those, who ought to be guided by truth alone! And would to God, the simplicity and the superstition of the people may never more contribute to support that authority, which  
some

some rash and dogmatical geniuses asuply Truth should not borrow the arms of falsehood to defend itself; nor virtue those of vice. Advantages should not be given to unbelievers and heretics, under pretence of opposing heresy and unbelief. We should render to God *irresistible service*; Rom. xii. 1. we should be *all spirits*; *not men*, judging all things; 1 Cor. ii. 15. according to the expression of the apostle. But I add no more on this article.

Hitherto we have spoken, if I may say so, to reason only; it is time now to speak to conscience. We have been preaching by arguments and syllogisms to the understanding; it is time now to preach by sentiments to the heart. Religion is not made for the mind alone, it is particularly addressed to the heart, and to the heart I would prove; that our Jesus hath accomplished, in the most sublime of all senses, this prophecy in the text: *Unto us a child is born; unto us a son is given*, and so on. This is our second part.

II. The terms *throne*, *kingdom*, *government*, are metaphorical, when they are applied to God, to his Messiah, to the end, which religion propoeth, and to the felicity, which it procures. They are very imperfect; and, if I may venture to say so, very low and mean, when they are used to represent objects of such infinite grandeur. No, there is nothing sufficiently noble in the characters of the greatest kings, nothing wise enough in their maxims, nothing gentle enough in their government, nothing pompous enough in their courts, nothing sufficiently glorious in their exploits, to represent fully the grandeur and glory of our Messiah.

Who is a king? What is a throne? Why have we masters? Why is sovereign power lodged in a few hands? and what determines mankind to lay aside their independence, and to lose their beloved liberty? The whole implies,

my

my brethren, some mortifying truths. We have not knowledge sufficient to guide ourselves, and we need minds wiser than our own to inspect and to direct our conduct. We are indigent, and superior beings must supply our wants. We have enemies, and we must have guardians to protect us.

Miserable men! how have you been deceived in your expectations? What disorders could anarchy have produced, greater than those, which have sometimes proceeded from sovereign authority? You sought guides to direct you: but you have sometimes fallen under the tuition of men, who, far from being able to conduct a whole people, knew not how to guide themselves. You sought nursing fathers, to succour you in your indigence: but you have fallen sometimes into the hands of men, who had no other designs than to impoverish their people, to enrich themselves with the substance, and to fatten themselves with the blood of their subjects. You sought guardians to protect you from your enemies: but you have sometimes found executioners, who have used you with greater barbarity, than your most bloody enemies would have done.

But, all these melancholy truths apart, suppose the fine notions, which we form of kings and of royalty, of sovereign power, and of the hands that hold it, were realized: how incapable are kings, and how inadequate is their government, to the relief of the innumerable wants of an immortal soul! Suppose kings of the most tender sentiments, formidable in their armies, and abundant in their treasures; could they heal the maladies, that afflict us here, or could they quench our painful thirst for felicity hereafter? Ye Casars! Ye Alexanders! Ye Trajans! Ye, who were, some of you, like Titus, the parents of your people, and the delights of mankind, ye thunderbolts of war! Ye idols of the world!

What

What doth all your pomp avail me? Of what use to me are all your personal qualifications; and all your regal magnificence? Can you, Can they, dissipate the darkness, that envelopes me; calm the conscience, that accuses and torments me; reconcile me to God; free me from the controul of my commanding and tyrannical passions; deliver me from death; and discover immortal happiness to me? Ye earthly gods! ignorant and wretched like me; objects like me of the displeasure of God; like me, exposed to the miseries of life; slaves to your passions like me; condemned like me to that frightful night in which death involveth all mankind; ye can relieve neither your own miseries nor mine!

Shew me a government, that supplies these wants; that is the empire I seek. Shew me a king, who will conduct me to the felicity, to which I aspire: such a king I long to obey. My brethren, this empire we are preaching to you! Such a king is the king Messiah. *Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given; the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called, WONDERFUL*, because he is the substance and the centre of all the wondrous works of God.

But purify your imaginations, and do not always judge of man as if he were a being destitute of reason and intelligence. When we speak of man, do not conceive of a being of this present world only; a creature placed for a few days in human society, wanting nothing but food and raiment, and the comforts of a temporal life: but attend to your own hearts. In the sad circumstances, into which sin hath brought you, what are your most important wants? We have already insinuated them. You need knowledge; you need reconciliation with God; you want support through all the miseries of life; and you need consolation against the fear of death.

Well!

Well! all these wants the king Messiah supplies. I am going to prove it, but I conjure you, at the same time, not only to believe, but to act. I would, by publishing the design of the Saviour's incarnation, engage you to concur in it. By explaining to you the nature of his empire, I would fain teach you the duties of his subjects. By celebrating the glory of the king Messiah, I long to see it displayed among you in all its splendid magnificence.

You want *knowledge*. You will find it in the king Messiah. He is the COUNSELLOR. He is the *true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world*, John i. 9. *In him are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge*, Col. ii. 3. *The Spirit of the Lord God is upon him, the Lord hath appointed him to preach good tidings unto the meek*, Isa. lxi. 1. The Spirit of the Lord rests upon him, the *spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge, and of the fear of the Lord*, chap. xi. 2. He hath the *tongue of the learned*, chap. l. 4. and the wisdom of the wise. Ask him to explain to you the grand appearances of nature, which exercise the speculations of the most transcendent geniuses, and absorb their defective reason, and all his answers will discover the most profound and perfect knowledge of them. Inquire of him whence all the visible creation came, the luminaries of heaven, and the magnificent treasures of the earth. Ask him to reveal to you the *God, who hideth himself*, Isa. xlv. 15. Ask him the cause of those endless disorders, which mix with that profusion of wisdom, which appears in the world. Ask him whence the blessings come, which we enjoy, and whence the calamities, that afflict us. Ask him what is the origin, the nature, the destiny, the end of man. Of all these articles the COUNSELLOR will tell you more than Plato, and Socrates, and all the philosophers,

philosophers, who only felt after the truth, Acts xvii. 27. who themselves discovered, and taught others to see, only a few rays of light darkened with prejudices and errors.

This is the first idea of the king Messiah; this is the first source of the duties of his subjects, and of the dispositions, with which they ought to celebrate his nativity, and with which alone they can celebrate it in a proper manner. To celebrate properly the festival of his nativity, truth must be esteemed; we must be desirous of attaining knowledge; we must come from the ends of the earth, like the wise men of the east, to contemplate the miracles, which the Messiah displays in the new world; like Mary, we must be all attention to receive the doctrine, that proceeds from his sacred mouth; like the multitude, we must follow him into deserts and mountains, to hear his admirable sermons. This is the first duty, which the festival, that you are to celebrate next Wednesday, demands. Prepare yourselves to keep it in this manner.

You want *reconciliation* with God, and this is the grand work of the king Messiah. He is THE PRINCE OF PEACE. He terminates the fatal war, which sin hath kindled between God and you, by obtaining the pardon of your past sins, and by enabling you to avoid the commission of sin for the future. He obtains the pardon of past sins for you. How can a merciful God resist the ardent prayers, which the Redeemer of mankind addresseth to him in behalf of those poor sinners, for whom he sacrificed himself? How can a merciful God resist the plea of the blood of his Son, which cries for mercy for the miserable posterity of Adam? As the king Messiah reconciles you to God, by obtaining the pardon of your past sin, so he reconciles you, by procuring strength to enable you to avoid it for time to come. Having calmed those passions which prevented

prevented your knowing what was right, and your loving what was lovely, he gave you laws of equity and love. How can you resist, after you have known him, the motives, on which his laws are founded? Every difficulty disappears, when examples so alluring are seen, and when you are permitted, under your most discouraging weaknesses, to approach the treasures of grace, which he hath opened to you, and to derive purity from its source. Both gratitude know any difficulties? Is not every act of obedience easy to a mind animated by a love as vehement as that, which cannot but be felt for a Saviour, who in the tenderest manner hath loved us?

This is the second idea of the king Messiah, this is the second source of the duties of his subjects, and of the dispositions essential to a worthy celebration of the feast of his nativity. Come next Wednesday deeply sensible of the danger of having that God for your enemy, who holds your destiny in his mighty hands, and whose commands all creatures obey. Come with an eager desire of reconciliation to him. Come and hear the voice of *the Prince of Peace*, who publisheth *peace a peace to him that is near, and to him that is far off*, Isa. lvii. 19. While Moses mediates a covenant between God and the Israelites, on the top of the holy mountain, let not Israel violate the capital article at the foot of it. While Jesus Christ is descending to reconcile you to God, do not declare war against God; insult him not by voluntary rebellions, after he hath voluntarily delivered you from the slavery of sin, under which you groaned. Return not again to those sins, which *separated between you and your God*, Isa. lix. 2. and which would do it again, though Jesus should become incarnate again, and should offer himself every day to expiate them.

You need support under the calamities of this life, and this also you will find in the king Mes-

hab. He is THE MIGHTY GOD, and he will tell you, while you are suffering the heaviest temporal afflictions, although "the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed, yet my kindness shall not depart from you, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed," chap. lv. 10. Under your severest tribulations, he will assure you, that *all things work together for good to them that love God*, Rom. viii. 28. He will teach you to shout victory under an apparent defeat, and to sing this triumphant song, "Thanks be unto God, who always causeth us to triumph in Christ," 2 Cor. ii. 14. "In all these things we are more than conquerors, through him that loved us," Rom. viii. 37.

This is the third idea of the king Messiah, and this is the third source of the duties of his subjects, and of the dispositions which are necessary to the worthily celebrating of the festival of his nativity. Fall in, christian soul! with the design of thy Saviour, who, by elevating thy desires above the world, would elevate thee above all the catastrophes of it. Come, behold Messiah, the king, lodging in a stable, and lying in a manger: hear him saying to his disciples, "The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the son of man hath not where to lay his head," Matt. viii. 20. Learn from this example not to place thy happiness in the possession of earthly good. Die to the world, die to its pleasures, die to its pomps. Aspire after other ends, and nobler joys, than those of the children of this world, and then worldly vicissitudes cannot shake thy bliss.

Finally, You have need of one to comfort you under the fears of death, by opening the gates of eternal felicity to you, and by satiating your avidity of existence and elevation. This consolation the king Messiah affords. He is the ever-

his



his throne shall be built up for all generations, Psal. lxxxix. 4. he hath received "dominion and glory and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him; his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed," Dan. xii. 14. and his subjects must reign eternally with him. When thou, christian! art confined to thy dying bed, he will approach thee, with all the attractive charms of his power and grace: he will say to thee, *Fear not, thou worm Jacob,* Isa. xli. 14. he will whisper these comfortable words in thine ear, "When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee: and when through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee," chap. xliii. 2. He will open Heaven to thee, as he opened it to St. Stephen; and he will say to thee, as he said to the converted thief, "To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise," Luke xxiii. 43.

This is the fourth idea of the King Messiah, and this is the fourth source of the duties of his subjects. How glorious is the festival of his nativity! What grand, noble, and sublime sentiments doth it require of us! The subjects of the king Messiah, the children of the everlasting Father, should consider the economy of time in its true point of view; they should compare "things which are seen, which are temporal, with things which are not seen, which are eternal," 2 Cor. iv. 18. They should fix their attention upon the eternity, fill their imaginations with the glory, of the world to come, and learn, by just notions of immortality, to estimate the present life; the "declining shadow; the withering grass; the fading flower; the dream, that flyeth away; the vapour, that vanisheth," and is irretrievably lost, Psal. ciii. 11. Isa. xl. 7. Job xx. 8. and James iv. 14. These,

These, my brethren, are the characters of your king Messiah, these are the characters of the divine child, whose birth you are to celebrate next Wednesday, and in these ways only can you celebrate it as it deserves. We conjure you by that adorable goodness, which we are going to testify to you again; we conjure you by that throne of grace, which God is about to ascend again; we conjure you by those ineffable mercies, which our imaginations cannot fully comprehend, which our minds cannot sufficiently admire, nor all the emotions of our hearts sufficiently esteem; we conjure you to look at, and, if you will pardon the expression, to lose yourselves in these grand objects; we conjure you not to turn our solemn festivals, and our devotional days, into seasons of gaming, irreligion, and dissipation. Let us submit ourselves to the king Messiah; let us engage ourselves to his government; let his dominion be the ground of all our joy.

“O most mighty! thou art fairer than the children of men. Grace is poured into thy lips, therefore God hath blessed thee for ever!” Psal. xlv. 2. 3. “The Lord shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion,” saying, “Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies! Thy people shall be willing in the day, when thou shalt assemble thy host in holy pomp!”\* Yea, reign over thine enemies,

\* We retain the reading of the French Bible here; because our author paraphrases the passage after that version. *Ton peuple sera un peuple plein de franc vouloir au jour qu: tu assembleras ton armee en sa sainte pompe. Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness, &c.* The passage seems to be a prophetic allusion to one of those solemn festivals, in which conquerors, and their armies, on their return from battle, offered a part of their spoil, which they had taken from their enemies, to God, from whom the victory came. These free-will offerings were carried in grand procession. They were holy, because

mies, great King ! bow their rebellious wills ; prevent their fatal counsels ; defeat all their bloody designs ! Reign also over thy friends, reign over us ! Make us a *willing people* ! Assemble all this congregation, when thou shalt come with *thy host in holy pomp* ! Let not the flying of the clouds, which will serve thee for a triumphal chariot ; let not the pomp of the holy angels in thy train, when thou shalt come to *judge the world in righteousness*, Acts xvij. 31. let not these objects fright and terrify our souls ; let them charm and transport us ; and, instead of dreading thine approach, let us hasten it by our prayers and sighs ! *Come, Lord Jesus, come quickly, Amen.* To God be honor and glory, for ever and ever.—Amen.

agreeable to the economy, under which the Jews lived, and they were *beautifully holy*, because they were not exacted, but proceeded from the *voluntary* gratitude of the army. In large conquests, the troops and the offerings were out of number, like the drops of such a shower of dew, as the *morning brought forth* in the *year*, or *spring* of the year. See 2 Chron. xiv. 13, 14, 15, and xv. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. We have ventured this hint on a passage, which seems not very clear in our version.



---

## SERMON VII.

### THE RESURRECTION OF JESUS CHRIST.

PSALM cxviii. 15, 16.

*The voice of rejoicing and salvation is in the tabernacles of the righteous: the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly. The right hand of the Lord is exalted: the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly.*

**W**OMAN! *why weepest thou?* John xx. 13, 15. was the language of two angels and of Jesus Christ to Mary. The Lord had been crucified. The infant church was in mourning. The enemies of christianity were triumphing. The faith of the disciples was tottering. Mary had set out before dawn of day, to give vent to her grief, to bathe the tomb of her Master with tears, and to render funeral honors to him. In these sad circumstances, the heavens opened, two angels clothed in white garments descended, and placed themselves on the tomb, that inclosed the dear depositum of the love of God to the church. At the fixed moment, they rolled away the stone, and Jesus Christ arose from the grave laden with the spoils of death. Hither Mary comes to see the dead body, the poor remain of him, *who should have redeemed Israel*; Luke xxiv. 21. and finding the tomb empty, abandons her whole soul to grief, and bursts into floods of tears. The heavenly messengers directly address these comfortable words to her, *Woman! Why weepest thou?* Scarcely had she told them the cause of her grief, before Jesus puts the same question to her, *Woman! Why weepest thou?* And to this language, which insinuateth into her heart, and ex-  
citeth,

*The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.* 171

diteth; if I may venture to speak so, from the bottom of her soul every emotion of tenderness and love, of which she is capable, he adds, *Mary!*

This is the magnificent, this is the affecting object, on which the eyes of all the church are this day fixed. This is the comfortable language which heaven to-day proclaims. For several weeks past you have been in tears. Your churches have been in mourning. Your eyes have beheld only sad and melancholy objects. On the one hand, you have been examining your consciences, and your minds have been overwhelmed with the sorrowful remembrance of broken resolutions, violated vows, and fruitless communions. On the other, you have seen Jesus, betrayed by one disciple, denied by another, forsaken by all; Jesus, delivered by priests to secular powers, and condemned by his judges to die; Jesus, sweating, as it were, *great drops of blood*; Luke xxii. 44. praying in Gethsemane: *O my Father! if it be possible, let this cup pass from me*, Matt. xxvi. 39, and crying on Mount Calvary, *My God! My God! Why hast thou forsaken me?* chap. xxvii. 46. Jesus, lying in the grave: these have been the mournful objects of your late contemplation. At the hearing of this tragical history, conscience trembles; and the whole church, on seeing the Saviour intombed, weeps as if salvation were buried with him. But take courage, thou tremulous conscience! Dry up thy tears, thou church of Jesus Christ! "Loose thyself from the bands of thy neck, O captive daughter of Sion!" Isa. liii. 2. Come, my brethren, approach the tomb of your Redeemer, no more to lament his death, no more to embalm his sacred body, which hath not been suffered to see corruption, Acts ii. 27. but to shout for joy at his resurrection. To this the prophet inviteth us in the text: "The voice of rejoicing and salvation

## 272 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ*

vation: in the tabernacles of the righteous; the right hand of the Lord is exalted: the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly."

I have not questioned, whether the psalm in general, and the text in particular, regard the Messiah. The ancient Jews understood the psalm of him; and therefore made use of it formerly among their prayers for his advent. We agree with the Jews, and on this article, we think they are safer guides than many christians. The whole psalm agrees with Jesus Christ, and is applicable to him as well as to David, particularly the famous words that follow the text: "The stone which the builders refused, is become the head-stone of the corner. This is the Lord's doing, it is marvellous in our eyes." These words are so unanimously applied to the exaltation, and particularly to the resurrection, of Jesus Christ, in the books of the New Testament, in the gospel of St. Matthew, in that of St. Mark, in that of St. Luke, in the book of Acts, in the epistle to the Romans; and in that to the Ephesians, that it seems needless, methinks, to attempt to prove a matter so fully decided.

The present solemnity demands reflections of another kind, and we will endeavour to shew you,

I. The truth of the event of which the text speaks: *The right hand of the Lord is exalted: the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly.*

II. We will justify the joyful acclamations, which are occasioned by it: *The voice of rejoicing and salvation is in the tabernacles of the righteous.*

III. Let us examine the evidences of the truth of the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Infidelity denies it, and what perhaps may be no less injurious to christianity, superstition pretends to establish it on falsehood and absurdity. **A**xers

tain

## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ. 123

tain traveller\* pretends, that the inhabitants of the holy land still shew travellers *the stone which the builders refused, and which became the head-stone of the corner.* In order to guard you against infidelity, we will urge the arguments, which prove the truth of the resurrection of Jesus Christ: but in order to prevent superstition, we will attribute to each argument no more evidence than what actually belongs to it.

In proof of the resurrection of Jesus Christ, we have, 1. *Presumption.* 2. *Proofs.* 3. *Demonstrations.* The circumstances of his burial afford some presumptions; the testimonies of the apostles furnish us with some arguments; and the descent of the holy Spirit on the church furnisheth us with demonstrations.

1. From the circumstances of the burial of Jesus Christ, I derive some *presumptions* in favor of the doctrine of the resurrection. Jesus Christ died. This is an incontestible principle. Our enemies, far from pretending to question this, charge it on christianity as a reproach.

The tomb of Jesus Christ was found empty a few days after his death. This is another incontestible principle. For if the enemies of christianity had retained his body in their possession, they would certainly have produced it for the ruin of the report of his resurrection. Hence ariseth a presumption that Jesus Christ rose from the dead.

If the body of Jesus Christ were not raised from the dead, it must have been stolen away. But this theft is incredible. Who committed it? The enemies of Jesus Christ? Would they have contributed to his glory, by countenancing a report of his resurrection? Would his disciples?

It

\* Peter Belon. Observ. lib. ii. cap. 83. Belon was a countryman of our author's, a physician of Le Mans, who travelled from 1546 to 1549. His travels were published 1555.

## 274 The Resurrection of Jesus Christ

It is probable; they would not: and it is next to certain, they could not. How could they have undertaken to remove the body? Frail and timorous creatures, people, who fled as soon as they saw him taken into custody; even Peter, the most courageous, trembled at the voice of a servant girl, and three times denied that he knew him: people of this character, would they have dared to resist the authority of the governor? Would they have undertaken to oppose the determination of the Sanhedrim, to force a guard, and to stand on to overcome soldiers armed, and aware of danger? If Jesus Christ were not risen again, (I speak the language of unbelievers) he had deceived his disciples with vain hopes of his resurrection. How could the disciples, not to discover the imposture? Would they have hazarded themselves, by undertaking so enterprising and perilous, in favor of a man, who had so cruelly imposed on their stupidity? as if it were possible, we were to grant, that they formed the design of removing the body, how could they have executed it? How could soldiers, armed, and on guard, suffer themselves to be overcome by a few timorous people? "Eiher," says St. Augustine, "they were asleep, or awake: If they were awake, why should they suffer the body to be taken away? If asleep, how could they know, that the disciples took it away? How dare they then depose that it was stolen?" All these, however, are only presumptions.

The testimony of the apostles, convinces us with arguments; and there are eight considerations, which give their evidence sufficient weight. Remark the *nature*, and the *number*, of the witnesses: The *fact* they avow, and the *agreement* of their evidence: The *tribunals*, before which they stood, and the *time*, in which they

\* Sermon ii. in Psal. xxxvi.



## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ 173

made their depositions. The place, where they affirmed the resurrection, and their motives for doing so. Consider the nature of those witnesses. Had they been men of opulence and credit in the world, we might have thought, that their reputation gave a run to the fable. Had they been learned and eloquent men, we might have imagined, that the style, in which they told the tale, had shocked the souls of the people into a belief of it. But, for my part, when I consider that the apostles were the lowest of mankind, without reputation to impose on people, without authority to compel, and without riches to reward: when I consider, that they were mean, rough, unlearned men, and consequently very unequal to the task of putting a cheat upon others: I cannot conceive, that people of this character could succeed in deceiving the whole church.

2. Consider the number of these witnesses. St. Paul enumerates them, and tells us, that Jesus Christ was seen of Cephas, 1 Cor. xv. 5, &c. This appearance is related by St. Luke, who saith, the Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to *Simeon*, chap. xxiv. 34. The apostle adds, then he was seen of the twelve. This is related by St. Mark, who saith, he appeared unto the eleven, chap. xvi. 14. It was the same appearance, for the apostles retained the appellation *twelve*, although, after Judas had been guilty of suicide, they were reduced to eleven. St. Paul adds further, after that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once: Jesus Christ promised this appearance to the women, *Go into Galilee*, and tell my Brethren, that they shall see me there, Matt. xxviii. 10. St. Luke tells us in the first chapter of Acts, that the church consisted of about three hundred and twenty members; this was the church at Jerusalem: but the greatest part

## 176 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

of the *five hundred*, of whom St. Paul speaks, were of Galilee, where Jesus Christ had preached his gospel, and where these converts abode after his resurrection. The apostle subjoins, *after that he was seen of James*; this appearance is not related by the evangelists: but St. Paul knew it by tradition.\* St. Jerom writes, that in a Hebrew gospel, attributed to St. Matthew, called *The Gospel of the Nazarenes*, it was said, *Jesus Christ appeared to St. James*; that, this apostle having made a vow neither to eat nor drink till Jesus should rise from the dead, the divine Saviour took bread and broke it, took wine and poured it out, and said to him, *Eat and drink, for the son of man is risen from the dead.*† St. Paul yet adds

\* Two of our Lord's apostles were named James. The elder of the two, brother of John, was put to death by Herod, Acts xii. 2. The other, who was first cousin to Jesus Christ, was called the *less*, the younger, probably, and lived many years after. It is not certain which of the two St. Paul means. If he mean the *first*, he had the account of the appearing of the Lord to him, probably, as Mr. Saurin says; by tradition: If the *last*, it is likely, he had it from James himself; for him he saw at Jerusalem, Gal. i. 19. and he was living in the year 57, when St. Paul wrote this first epistle to the Corinthians.

† The gospel, of which Mr. Saurin, after St. Jerom, speaks, is now lost. It was probably one of those mangled, interpolated copies of the true gospel of St. Matthew, which, through the avidity of the lower sort of people to know the history of Jesus Christ, had been transcribed, and debased, and was handed about the world. I call it *mangled*; because some parts of the true gospel were *omitted*. I call it *interpolated*; because some things were *added from other gospels*, as the history of the woman caught in adultery, from St. John: Euseb. Eccl. hist. lib. iii. cap. 39. and others from report, as the above passage relative to James; &c. This book was written in Syriac, with Hebrew characters, St. Jerom translated it into Greek, and Latin, and divers of the fathers quote it, as Hegesippus, Euseb. E. H. lib. iv. 22. Ignatius Ep. and Smyrnenica,

## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ. 177

adds further, "Then he was seen of all the apostles; and, last of all, of me also, as of one born out of due time." So numerous were the witnesses of the resurrection of Jesus Christ! from this fact we derive a second argument; for, had the witnesses been few, it might have been said, that the base design of deceiving the whole church was formed by one, and propagated by a few more; or that some one had fancied he saw Jesus Christ; but when St. Paul, when the rest of the apostles, when *five hundred brethren* attest the truth of the fact; what room remains for suspicion and doubt?

3. Observe *the facts themselves, which they avow*, Had they been metaphysical reasonings, depending on a chain of principles and consequences; had they been periods of chronology, depending on long and difficult calculations; had they been distant events, which could only have been known by the relations of others; their reasonings might have been suspected: But they are facts, which are in question, facts, which the witnesses declared, they had seen with their own eyes at divers places, and at several times. Had they seen Jesus Christ? Had they touched him? Had they sitted at table, and eaten with him? Had they conversed with him? All these are questions of fact: it was impossible they could be deceived in them.

4. Remark *the agreement of their evidence*. They all unanimously deposed, that Jesus Christ rose from the dead. It is very extraordinary, that a gang of five hundred impostors, (I speak the language of infidels) a company, in which

Q

there

Edit. Usell, p. 112. Clement of Alexandria; Sironian; li. p. 278; Edd. Jugdun. 1616. Origen, St. Jerome, &c. It went by the names of the gospel according to St. Matthew, the gospel according to the Hebrews, the gospel of the twelve apostles, the gospel of the Nazarenes. See Luke i. 11.

278 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

there must needs be people of different capacities and tempers, the witty and the dull, the timid and the bold; it is very strange, that such a numerous body, as this should maintain an unity of evidence. This, however, is the case of our witnesses. What christian ever contradicted himself? What christian ever impeached his accomplices? What christian ever discovered this pretended imposture?

5. *Observe the tribunals, before which they gave evidence,* and the innumerable multitude of people by whom their testimony was examined, by Jews and Heathens, by philosophers and Rabbies, and by an infinite number of people, who went annually to Jerusalem: For, my brethren, Providence so ordered these circumstances, that the testimony of the apostles might be unsuspected, Providence continued Jerusalem forty years after the resurrection of our Lord, that all the Jews in the world might examine the evidence concerning it, and obtain authentic proof of the truth of christianity. I repeat it again, then, the apostles maintained the resurrection of Jesus Christ before Jews, before Pagans, before philosophers, before Rabbies, before courtiers, before lawyers, before people expert in examining, and in cross-examining witnesses, in order to lead them into self-contradiction. Had the apostles borne their testimony in consequence of a pre-concerted plot between themselves, is it not morally certain, that, as they were examined before such different and capable men, some one would have discovered the pretended fraud?

6. *Consider the place, in which the apostles bore their testimony.* Had they published the resurrection of the Saviour of the world in distant countries, beyond mountains and seas, it might have been supposed, that distance of place, rendering it extremely difficult for their hearers to obtain exact information, had facilitated the establishment

establishment of the error: But the apostles preached in Jerusalem, in the synagogues, in the pretorium; they unfolded and displayed the banners of their master's cross, and set up tokens of his victory, on the very spot, on which the infamous instrument of his sufferings had been set up.

7. Observe the time of this testimony. Had the apostles first published this resurrection several years after the epocha, which they assigned for it; unbelief might have availed itself of the delay: but three days after the death of Jesus Christ, they said, he was risen again, and they re-echoed their testimony in a singular manner at Pentecost, when Jerusalem expected the spread of the report, and endeavored to prevent it; while the eyes of their enemies were yet sparkling with rage and madness; and while Calvary was yet dyed with the blood they had spilt there. Do impostors take such measures? Would not they have waited till the fury of the Jews had been appeased, till judges, and public officers, had been changed, and till people had been less attentive to their depositions?

8. Consider, lastly, the motives, which induced the apostles to publish the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Survey the face of the world; examine all the impostures, that are practised in society. Falsehood, imposition, treachery, perjury, abound in society. To every different trade and profession some peculiar deceptions belong. However, all mankind have one design in deceiving, they all deceive for their own interest. Their interests are infinitely diversified; but it is interest, however, that always animates all deceivers. There is one interest of pride, another of pleasure, a third of profit. In the case before us the nature of things is subverted, and all our notions of the human heart contradicted. It must be pre-supposed, that, whereas other men generally

## 180 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

ally sacrifice the interest of their salvation to their temporal interest, the apostles, on the contrary, sacrificed their temporal interest without any inducement from the interest of salvation itself. Suppose, they had been craftily led, during the life of Jesus Christ, into the expectation of some temporal advantages, how came it to pass, that, after they saw their hopes blasted, and themselves threatened with the most rigorous punishments, they did not redeem their lives by confessing the imposture? In general, the more wicked a traitor is, the more he trembles, alters, and confesses, at the approach of death. Having betrayed, for his own interest, the laws of his country, the interests of society, the confidence of his prince, and the credit of religion, he betrays the companions of his imposture, the accomplices of his crimes. Here, on the contrary, the apostles persist in their testimony till death, and sign the truths they have published with the last drops of their blood. These are our arguments.

We proceed now to our *demonstrations*, that is, to the miracles, with which the apostles sealed the truth of their testimony. Imagine these venerable men addressing their adversaries on the day of the christian pentecost in this language. "You refuse to believe us on our depositions; five hundred of us, you think, are enthusiasts, all infected with the same malady, who have carried our absurdity so far as to imagine that we have seen a man, whom we have not seen; eaten with a man, with whom we have not eaten; conversed with a man, with whom we have not conversed: or perhaps you think us impostors, or take us for mad men, who intend to suffer ourselves to be imprisoned, and tortured, and crucified, for the sake of enjoying the pleasure of deceiving mankind, by prevailing upon them to believe a fanciful resurrection: you think we are so stupid as to act a part so extravagant. But bring

## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ. 181

bring out your sick; present your dæmoniacs; fetch hither your dead. Confront us with Medes, Parthians; and Elamites; let Cappadocia, Pontus, Asia, Egypt, Phrygia, Pamphylia, let all nations and people send us some of their inhabitants, we will restore hearing to the deaf, and sight to the blind; we will make the lame walk, we will cast out devils, and raise the dead. We, we publicans, we illiterate men, we tent-makers, we fishermen, we will discourse with all the people of the world in their own languages. We will explain prophecies, elucidate the most obscure predictions, develop the most sublime mysteries, teach you notions of God, precepts for the conduct of life, plans of morality and religion, more extensive, more sublime, and more advantageous, than those of your priests and philosophers, yea than those of Moses himself. We will do more still. We will communicate these gifts to you, *the word of wisdom, the word of knowledge, faith, the gifts of healing, the working of miracles, prophecy, discerning of spirits, divers kinds of tongues, interpretation of tongues,* 1 Cor. xii. 8, &c. all these shall be communicated to you by your ministry.\*

All these things the apostles professed; all these proofs they gave of the resurrection of Jesus Christ; "this Jesus hath God raised up; and he hath shewed forth this, which ye now see and hear," Acts ii. 32, 33. This consideration furnishes with an answer to the greatest objection, that was ever made to the resurrection of Jesus Christ, and, in general, to his whole economy. "How is it," say unbelievers sometimes, "that your Jesus exposed all the circumstances of his abasement to the public eye, and concealed those of his elevation? If he were transfigured on the mount, it was only before Peter, James, and John. If he ascended to heaven, none but his disciples saw his ascent. If he rose again from

## 182 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

the dead, and appeared, he appeared only to those, who were interested in his fame. Why did he not shew himself to the synagogue? Why did he not appear to Pilate? Why did he not shew himself alive in the streets, and public assemblies, of Jerusalem? Had he done so, infidelity would have been eradicated, and every one would have believed his own eyes: but the secrecy of all these events exposeth them to very just suspicions, and giveth plausible pretexts to errors, if errors they be."

We omit many solid answers to this objection; perhaps we may urge them on future occasions, and at present we content ourselves with observing, that the apostles, who attested the resurrection of Jesus Christ, wrought miracles in the presence of all those, before whom, you say, Jesus Christ ought to have produced himself after his resurrection. The apostles wrought miracles; behold Jesus Christ! see his Spirit! behold his resurrection! "God hath raised up Jesus Christ, and he hath shed forth what ye now see and hear." This way of proving the resurrection of Christ was as convincing as the shewing of himself to each of his enemies would have been; as the exposure of his wounds before them, or the permitting of them to thrust their hands into his side, would have been. Yes, this was a more convincing way, than that would have been; for which you plead. Had Jesus Christ shewn himself, they might have thought him a phantom, or a counterfeit; they might have supposed, that a resemblance of features had occasioned an illusion: but what could an unbeliever oppose against the healing of the sick, the raising of the dead, the expulsion of devils, the alteration and subversion of all nature?

It may be said, perhaps, all these proofs, if indeed they ever existed, were conclusive to them, who, it is pretended, saw the miracles of the apostles;



## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ. 183

apostles; but they can have no weight with us, who live seventeen centuries after them. We reply, The miracles of the apostles cannot be doubted without giving into an universal scepticism; without establishing this unwarrantable principle, that we ought to believe nothing but what we see; and without taxing three sorts of people, equally unsuspected, with extravagance on this occasion.

1. They, who call themselves *the operators of these miracles*, would be chargeable with extravagance. If they wrought none, they were impostors, who endeavored to deceive mankind. If they were impostors of the least degree of common sense, they would have used some precautions to conceal their imposture. But see how they relate the facts, of the truth of which we pretend no doubt. They specify times, places, and circumstances. They say, such and such facts passed in such cities, such public places, such assemblies, in sight of such and such people. Thus St. Paul writes to the Corinthians. He directs to a society of christians in the city of Corinth. He tells them, that they had received miraculous gifts, and censures them for making a parade of them. He reproves them for striving to display, each his own gifts in their public assemblies. He gives them some rules for the regulation of their conduct in this case. "If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret. If there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church. Let the prophets speak, two, or three. If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace," 1 Cor. xiv. 27, 28, &c. I ask, with what face could St. Paul have written in this manner to the Corinthians, if all these facts had been false? If the Corinthians had received neither *the gifts of prophecy*, nor *the discerning*

*discerning of spirits, nor divers kinds of tongues.* What a stout had he, who wrote in this manner?

2. *The enemies of Christianity* must be taxed with extravagance. Since christians gloried in the shining miracles, that their preachers wrought; and since their preachers gloried in performing them before whole assemblies, it would have been very easy to discover their imposture, had they been impostors. Suppose a modern impostor, preaching a new religion, and pretending to the glory of confirming it by notable miracles, wrought in this place: What method should we take to refute him? Should we affirm that miracles do not prove the truth of a doctrine? Should we have recourse to miracles wrought by others? Should we not exclaim against the fraud? Should we not appeal to our own eyes? Should we want any thing more than the dissembler's own professions to convict him of imposture? Why did not the avowed enemies of christianity, who endeavored by their publications to refute it, take these methods? How was it, that Celsus, Porphyry, Zosimus, Julian the apostate, and Hierocles, the greatest antagonists, that christianity ever had, and whose writings are in our hands, never denied the facts: but, allowing the principle, turned all the points of their arguments against the consequences, that christians inferred from them? By supposing the falshood of the miracles of the apostles, do we not tax the enemies of christianity with absurdity?

In fact, *This supposition* chargeth the whole multitude of christians, who embraced the gospel, with extravagance. The examination of the truth of religion, now, depends on a chain of principles and consequences, which require a profound attention: and, therefore, the number of those, who profess such or such a religion, can-

## *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.* 185

not demonstrate the truth of their religion. But in the days of the apostles the whole depended on a few plain facts. Hath Jesus Christ communicated his Spirit to his apostles? Do the apostles work miracles? Have they the power of imparting miraculous gifts to those, who embrace their doctrine? And yet this religion, the diffusion of which was so plain and easy, spread itself far and wide. If the apostles did not work miracles, one of these two suppositions must be made: either these profelytes did not deign to open their eyes, but sacrificed their prejudices, passions, educations, ease, fortunes, lives, and consciences, without condescending to spend one moment on the examination of this question: Do the apostles work miracles? or that, on supposition they did open their eyes, and did find the falshood of these pretended miracles, they yet sacrificed their prejudices, and their passions, their educations, their ease, and their honor, their properties, their consciences, and their lives, to a religion, which wholly turned on this false principle, that its miracles were true.

Collect all these proofs together, my brethren, consider them in one point of view, and see how many extravagant suppositions must be advanced, if the resurrection of our Saviour be denied. It must be supposed, that guards, who had been particularly cautioned by their officers, sat down to sleep, and that, however they deserved credit when they said the body of Jesus Christ was stolen: it must be supposed, that men who had been imposed on in the most odious and cruel manner in the world, hazarded their dearest enjoyments for the glory of an impostor. It must be supposed, that ignorant and illiterate men, who had neither reputation, fortune, nor eloquence, possessed the art of fascinating the eyes of all the church. It must be supposed, either that five hundred persons were all deprived of their senses at a time;

or

or that they were all deceived in the plainest matters of fact; or that this multitude of false witnesses had found out the secret of never contradicting themselves, or one another, and of being always uniform in their testimony. It must be supposed, that the most expert courts of judicature could not find out a shadow of contradiction in a palpable imposture. It must be supposed, that the apostles, sensible men in other cases, chose precisely those places, and those times, which were the most unfavorable to their views. It must be supposed, that millions, madly suffered imprisonment, tortures, and crucifixions, to spread an illusion. It must be supposed, that ten thousand miracles were wrought in favor of falsehood: or all these facts must be denied, and then it must be supposed, that the apostles were idiots, that the enemies of christianity, were idiots, and that all the primitive christians, were idiots.

The arguments that persuade us of the truth of the resurrection of Jesus Christ, are so clear, and so conclusive, that if any difficulty remain, it ariseth from the brightness of the evidence itself. Yes, I declare, if any thing has shaken my confidence in it, it hath arisen from this consideration. I could not conceive how a truth, attested by so many irreproachable witnesses, and confirmed by so many notorious miracles, should not make more proselytes; how it could possibly be, that all the Jews, and all the heathens, did not yield to this evidence. But this difficulty ought not to weaken our faith. In the folly of mankind its solution lies. Men are capable of any thing to gratify their passions, and to defend their prejudices. The unbelief of the Jews and heathens is not more wonderful than a hundred other phenomena, which, were we not to behold them every day, would equally alarm us. It is not more surprizing than the superstitious veneration, in which, for many ages, the christ-

*The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.* 187

tian world held that dark, confused, pagan gen-  
ius, Aristotle; a veneration; which was carried  
so far, that when metaphysical questions were dis-  
puted in the schools, questions on which every  
one ought always to have liberty to speak his  
opinion; when they were examining whether  
there were a void in nature, whether nature ab-  
horred a vacuum, whether matter were divisible,  
whether there were atoms, properly so called;  
when it could be proved, in disputes of this kind,  
that Aristotle was of such or such an opinion,  
his infallibility was allowed, and the dispute was  
at end. The unbelief of the ancients is not more  
surprising than the credulity of the moderns:  
We see kings, and princes, and a great part of  
christendom, submit to a pope, yea to an inferior  
priest, often to one who is void of both sense and  
grace. It is not more astonishing than the im-  
plicit faith of christians, who believe, in an en-  
lightened age, in the days of Descartes, Paschal,  
and Malbranche, what an I saying? Descartes,  
Paschal, and Malbranche themselves believe, that  
a piece of bread, which they reduce to a pulp  
with their teeth, which they taste, swallow, and  
digest, is the body of their Redeemer. The an-  
cient unbelief is not more wonderful than yours,  
protestants! You profess to believe there is a  
judgment, and a hell, and to know that misers,  
adulterers, and drunkards, must suffer everlasting  
punishments there, and although you cannot be  
ignorant of your being in this fatal list, yet you  
are as easy about futurity, as if you had read  
your names in the book of life, and had no rea-  
son to entertain the least doubt of your salva-  
tion.

II. We have urged the arguments, that prove  
the resurrection of Jesus Christ: I shall detain  
you only a few moments longer in justifying the  
joyful acclamations which it produced. The  
voice of rejoicing and salvation, is in the taber-  
nacles

## 188 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

nacles of the righteous : the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly. The right hand of the Lord is exalted : the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly."

The three melancholy days that passed between the death of Jesus Christ and his resurrection, were days of triumph for the enemies of the church. Jesus Christ riseth again ; and the church triumphs in its turn : "The voice of rejoicing and salvation, is in the tabernacles of the righteous. The right hand of the Lord doth valiantly."

1. In those melancholy days, *heresy triumphed over truth.* The greatest objection that was made against the satisfaction of Jesus Christ, was taken from his innocence, which is the foundation of it. For if Jesus Christ were innocent, where was divine justice when he was overwhelmed with sufferings, and put to death ? Where was it, when he was exposed to the unbridled rage of the populace ? This difficulty seems at first indissoluble. Yea, rather let all the guilty perish ; rather let all the posterity of Adam be plunged into hell ; rather let divine justice destroy every creature that divine goodness hath made, than leave so many virtues, so much benevolence, and so much fervour, humility so profound, and zeal so great, without indemnity and reward. But when we see that Jesus Christ, by suffering death, disarmed it, by lying in the tomb took away its sting, by his crucifixion ascended to a throne, the difficulty is diminished, yea, it vanisheth away : "The voice of rejoicing and salvation, is in the tabernacles of the righteous. The right hand of the Lord is exalted : the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly." God, and man are reconciled ; divine justice is satisfied ; henceforth we may go "boldly to the throne of grace. There is now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus. Who shall lay any thing

thing to the charge of God's elect? Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died; yea, rather, that is risen again," Heb. iv. 16. Rom. viii. 1, 32, 34.

2. In those mournful days *infidelity triumphed over faith*. As the sight of a deceased Jesus the infidel displayed his system by insulting him; who sacrificed his passions to his duty; and by saying, See, see, that pale motionless carcass! Bless God and die! "All events come alike to all, there is one event to the righteous and to the wicked; to the clean and to the unclean; to him

R

So the French bible reader the words, *Bless God and die!* our translation hath it, *cursed God and die*. Job, who best knew his wife, calls this a *foolish saying*; that is, a saying void of humanity and religion; for so the word, *foolish* signifies in scripture. It was a cruel popular sarcasm, frequently used by sceptics on those who persisted in the belief of a God, and of the perfection and excellence of his providence, even while he suffered them to lie under the most terrible calamities: "Your God is the God of unbelief and unbelief! He regards the actions of men! He rewards virtue! He punishes vice! On these erroneous principles your adoration of him has been built. This was a pardonable folly in the time of your prosperity; but what an absurdity to persist in it now! If your present sufferings do not undeceive you, no future means can. Your mind is past information. Persevere! Go on in your adoration till you die!"

It may seem strange at first, that the same term should stand for two such opposite ideas as *bleeding* and *cursing*; but a very plain and natural reason may be assigned for it. The Hebrew word originally signified to *bless*, (*benedicere*); and when applied to God, it meant to *bless*, that is, to *praise* God by *worshipping* him. The Talmudists say, that the religious honors which were paid to God, were of four sorts. The prostration of the whole body was one: The bowing of the head another: The bending of the upper part of the body towards the knees a third; and *genuflexion*, the fourth. Megilla fol. 22. 2. apud Buxtorff, Lex. In these ways was God *praised, worshipped, or blessed*, and the Hebrew word for blessing was naturally put

190 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

*that sacrificeth; and to him that sacrificeth not; as is the godd, so is the sinner, and he that swear-eth as he that feareth an oath; Eccles. ix. 2.*

Jesus

For *gemflexion*, the expression of blessing, or praising: thus it is rendered Psalm xcvi. 6. let us kneel before the Lord: 2 Chron. vi. 13. Solomon *kneel* down upon his knees. The bending of the knee being a usual token of respect, which people paid to one another, when they met, the word was transferred to this also, and is properly *salute*: 2 Kings iv. 19. If thou meet any man *salute* him not. The same token of respect being passing, the word was also applied to that: They *blessed* Rebekah, that is, they bade her farewell, accompanying their good wishes with *gemflexion*. From this known meaning of the word, it was applied to a bending of the knee where no blessing could be intended; he made his camels *kneel* down, Gen. xxiv. 11. It was put sometimes for the respect, that was paid to a magistrate, Gen. xli. 43. and sometimes for the respect, which idolaters paid to false gods. But to bow the knee to an idol was to deny the existence of God, to renounce his worship, or, in the scripture style, to curse God, to blaspheme God, &c. If I beheld the sun, or the moon, and my mouth hath kissed my hand, I should have denied the God, that is above, Job xxii. 26, 27, 28. Only the scope of the place, therefore, can determine the precise meaning of the word. The word must be rendered *curse*, *deny*, God, or *renounce his worship*, Job i. 5, 11. and it must be rendered *bless*, *acknowledge*, or *worship* him, in ver. 21. The Septuagint, after a long sarcastic paraphrase, supposed to have been spoken by Job's wife, renders the phrase *eipan ti rema prao Kurion kai telenta*: To bring our meaning into a narrow compass. If an ancient Jew had seen a dumb man bend his knee in the tabernacle, or in the temple, he would have said he *blessed* the LORD. Had he seen him, bend his knee at court, in the presence of Solomon, he would have said he *blessed*, that is, he *saluted* the KING. And had he seen him bend his knee in a house of Baal; or in an idolatrous grove, he would have said, he *blessed* an IDOL; or, as the embracing of idolatry was the renouncing of the worship of the true God, he would have said, he *cursed* JEHOVAN. We have ventured this conjecture to prevent any prejudices against the English bible; that may arise from the strangely uncertain meaning of some Hebrew words.



## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ. 191

Jesus Christ riseth from the dead : "The voice of rejoicing and salvation, is in the tabernacles of the righteous." The system of the infidel sinks : "he errs, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God," Matt. xxii. 29.

3. In those dismal days, *tyranny triumphed over the perseverance of martyrs.* Innocence was oppressed, and the rewards of virtue seemed to be buried in the tomb of him, who, above all others, had devoted himself to it. Jesus Christ riseth again : "The voice of rejoicing and salvation, is in the tabernacles of the righteous." The designs of the enemies of innocence are all frustrated, and their attempts to disgrace purity serve only to exalt its glory, and to perpetuate its memory. Let the tyrants of the church, threaten against us ; let *the gates of hell*, Matt. xvi. 18. consult to destroy us ; let the kings of the earth, more furious oftener than hell itself, set themselves against the Lord and against his anointed, Psal. ii. 2; let them set up gibbets, let them equip galleys, let them kindle fires to burn us, and prepare racks to torture us ; they themselves, and all their cruel inventions, shall serve the purposes of the almighty God : The Assyrian is only the rod of his anger, Isa. x. 5. "Herod and Pilate do only what his hand and his counsel determined before to be done," Acts iv. 28. God knoweth how to restrain their fury, and to say to them, as he saith to the ocean, "Hitherto shalt thou come, but not further : and here shall thy proud waves be stayed," Job xxxviii. 2.

4. Finally, in those fatal days, *death triumphed over all human hope of immortal glory.* The destiny of all believers is united to that of Jesus Christ. He had said to his disciples, *because I live, ye shall live also*, John xiv. 19. In like manner, on the same principle, we may say, If he be dead, we are dead also. And how could

192 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ*

we have hoped to live, if he who is our life, had not freed himself from the state of the dead? Jesus Christ riseth from the dead. "The voice of rejoicing is in the tabernacles of the righteous." Nature is re-instated in its primal dignity; death is swallowed up in victory, 1. Cor. xv. 54. the grave is disarmed of its sting. Let my eyesight decay; let my body bow under the weight of old age; let the organs of my body cease to perform their wonted operations; let all my senses fail; let death sweep away the dear relatives of my bosom, and my friends, who are as mine own soul, Deut. xiii. 6. let these eyes, gushing with tears, attended with sighs, and sorrows, and groans, behold her expire, who was my company in solitude, my counsel in difficulty, my comfort in disgrace; let me follow to the grave, the bones, the carcase, the precious remains of this dear part of myself; my converse is suspended, but is not destroyed; "Lazarus, my friend, sleepest, but if I believe, I shall see the glory of God." Jesus Christ is the resurrection and the life, John xiv. 2, 49, 26. He is risen from the dead, and therefore shall one day rise. Jesus Christ is not a private person, he is a public representative, he is the saviour of the church, "the first fruits of them that sleep." If the spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell in you; he that raised up Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortal bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you" 1. Cor. xv. 20. Rom. viii. 2.

Was ever joy more rational? Was triumph ever more glorious? The triumphant entries of conquerors, the songs that rend the air in praise of their victories, the pyramids on which their exploits are transmitted to posterity, when they have subdued a general, routed an army, humbled the pride, and repressed the rage of a foe; ought not all these to yield to the joys that are occasioned.

## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ. 193

occasioned by the event which we celebrate to day? Ought not all these to yield to the victories of our incomparable Lord, and to his people's expressions of praise? One part of the gratitude, which is due to beneficial events, is to know their value, and to be affected with the benefits which they procure.

Let us celebrate the praise of the author of our redemption, my brethren; let us call heaven and earth to witness our gratitude. Let an increase of zeal accompany this part of our engagements. Let a double portion of fire from heaven kindle our sacrifice; and with a heart penetrated with the liveliest gratitude, and with the most ardent love, let each christian exclaim, "Blessed be the God, and Father of my Lord Jesus Christ, who, according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten me again to a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead," 1 Pet. i. 3. Let him join his voice to that of angels, and, in concert with the celestial intelligences, let him sing, "Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of hosts; the whole earth is full of his glory," Isa. vi. 3. Let the *tabernacles of the righteous* resound with the text, *the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly: the right hand of the Lord doth valiantly.*

But what melancholy thoughts are these, which interrupt the pleasures of this day? Whose *tabernacles* are these? The *tabernacles of the righteous*? Ah! my brethren! wo be to you, if, under pretence that *the righteous* ought to rejoice to-day, you rejoice by adding sin to sin! The resurrection of the Saviour of the world, perfectly affords with the other parts of his economy. It is a spring flowing with motives of holiness. God has left nothing undone in the work of your salvation. The great work is finished. Jesus Christ completed it, when he rose from the tomb. The Son hath paid the ran-

194 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

son. The Father hath accepted it. The holy Spirit hath published it, and by innumerable prodigies hath confirmed it. None but yourselves can condemn you. Nothing can deprive you of this grace, but your own contempt of it.

But the more precious this grace is, the more criminal, and the more affronting to God, will your contempt of it be. The more joy, with which the glory of a risen Jesus ought to inspire you, if you believe in him, the more terror ought you to feel, if you attempt to disobey him. He, who "declared him the son of God, with power by the resurrection from the dead; put a sceptre of iron into his hand, that he might break his enemies, and dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel," Rom. i. 4. Psal. ii. 9. Dost thou enter into these reflections? Dost thou approach the table of Jesus Christ with determinations to live a new life? I believe so. But the grand fault of our communions, and solemn festivals, doth not lie in the precise time of our communions and solemnities. The representation of Jesus Christ in the Lord's supper; certain reflections that move conscience; an extraordinary attention to the noblest object in religion; the solemnities that belong to our public festivals; inspire us with a kind of devotion: but how often does this devotion vanish with the objects that produced it? These august symbols should follow thee into thy warfare in the world. A voice should sound in thine ears amidst the tumult of the world; amidst the dissipating scenes that besiege thy mind; amidst the pleasures that fascinate thine eyes; amidst the grandeur and glory which thou causest to blaze around thee, and with which thou thyself, although, alas! always mortal, always a worm of the earth, always dust and ashes, art the first to be dazzled; a voice should sound in thine ears, Remember thy vows, remember thine oaths, remember thy joys.

My

## The Resurrection of Jesus Christ. 195.

My brethren, if you be not to-morrow, and till the next Lord's supper-day, what you are to-day, we recall all the congratulations, all the benedictions, and all the declarations of joy, which we have addressed to you. Instead of congratulating you on your happiness in being permitted to approach God in your devotions, we will deplore your wickedness in adding perjury and perjury to all your other crimes. Instead of benedictions and vows, we will cry "Anathema, Maranatha; if any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema," 1 Cor. xvi. 22. If any man who hath killed the Saviour betray him, *let him be Anathema*. If any man defile the mysteries of our holy religion, *let him be Anathema*. If any man "tread under foot the Son of God, and count the blood of the covenant an unholy thing, let him be Anathema," Heb. x. 29. Instead of inviting thee to celebrate the praise of the author of our being, we forbid thee the practice, for it is comely only for the upright; Psal. xxxiii. 1. *God, by our ministry, saith to thee, Thou wicked man! What hast thou to do to take my covenant in thy mouth?* Psal. 1. 16. *Why doth that mouth now bless my name, and then blaspheme it: now praise me thy Creator, and then defame my creatures: now publish my gospel, and then profane it?*

If, on the contrary, you live agreeably to the engagements into which you have entered to-day; what a day, what a day, my brethren, is this day? A day in which you have performed the great work, for which God formed you, and which is all that deserves the attention of an immortal soul. A day in which many impurities, many calumnies, many passionate actions, many perjuries, and many oaths have been buried in everlasting silence. It is a day, in which you have been washed in the blood of the Lamb; in which you have entered into fellowship with  
God;

## 196 *The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*

God ; in which you have heard these triumphant shouts in the church, *Grace, grace unto it, Zech. iv. 7.* A day in which you have been *raised up together, and made to sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus, Eph. ii. 6.* A day, the pleasing remembrance of which will follow you to your death-bed, and will enable your pastors to open the gates of heaven to you, to commit your souls into the hands of the Redeemer who ransomed it, and say to you, Remember, on such a day your sins were effaced ; remember, on such a day Jesus Christ disarmed death ; remember, on such a day the gate of heaven was opened to you.

O day ! which the Lord hath made, let me for ever rejoice in thy light ! O day of designs, resolutions, and promises, may I never forget thee ! O day of consolation and grace, may a rich effusion of the peace of God on this auditory, preserve thy memorial through a thousand generations !

Receive this peace, my dear brethren. I spread over you hands washed in the innocent blood of my Redeemer ; and as our risen Lord Jesus Christ, when he appeared to his disciples, said to them, *Peace, peace be unto you ;* so we, by his command, while we celebrate the memorable history of his resurrection, say to you, "Peace, peace be unto you. As many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God," John xx. 19, 21. Gal. vi. 16. To him be honor and glory for ever.—Amen.

---

## SERMON VIII.

---

### THE ABSURDITY OF LIBERTINISM AND INFIDELITY.

PSALM, xciv. 7, 8, 9, 10.

*They say, The Lord shall not see : neither shall the God of Jacob regard it. Understand, ye most brutish among the people : and ye fools, when will ye be wise ? He, that planted the ear, shall he not hear ? He, that formed the eye, shall he not see ? He, that chastiseth the heathen, shall not be correct ? He, that teacheth man knowledge, shall not he know ?*

**I**NVECTIVE and reproach seldom proceed from the mouth of a man, who loves truth and defends it. They are the usual weapons of them, who plead a desperate cause ; who feel themselves hurt by a formidable adversary ; who have not the equity to yield, when they ought to yield ; and who have no other part to take, than that of supplying the want of solid reasons, by odious names.

Yet, whatever charity we may have for erroneous people, it is difficult to see, with moderation, men obstinately maintaining some errors, guiding their minds by the corruption of their hearts, and choosing rather to advance the most palpable absurdities, than to give the least check to the most irregular passions. Hear how the sacred authors treat people of this character. " My people is foolish, they have not known me ; they are sottish children, they have no understanding. The ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib ; but Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider. Ephraim is like

like a silly dove, without heart. O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you," Jer. iv. 22. Isa. i. 3. Hos. vii. 11. Matt. iii. 7. and Gal. iii. 1.

Not to multiply examples, let it suffice to remark, that, if ever there were men, who deserved such odious names, they are such as our prophet describes. Those abominable men I mean, who, in order to violate the laws of religion without remorse, maintain, that religion is a chimera; who break down all the bounds, which God hath set to the wickedness of mankind, and who determine, to be obstinate Infidels, that they may be peaceable libertines. The prophet, therefore, lays aside, in respect to them, that charity, which a weak mind would merit, that errs only through the misfortune of a bad education, or the strait limits of a narrow capacity. "O ye most brutish among the people," says he to them, "understand. Ye fools, when will ye be wise?"

People of this sort, I intend to attack to-day. Not that I promise myself much success with them, or entertain hopes of reclaiming them. These are the *fools*, of whom Solomon says, "though thou shouldest bray a fool in a mortar among wheat with a pestle, yet will not his foolishness depart from him," Prov. xxvii. 22. But I am endeavoring to prevent the progress of the evil, and to guard our youth against favorable impressions of infidelity and libertinism, which have already decoyed away too many of our young people, and to confirm you all in your attachment to your holy religion. Let us enter into the matter.

In the style of the sacred authors, particularly in that of our prophet, to deny the existence of a God, the doctrine of Providence, and the essential difference between just and unjust, is one and the



the same thing. Compare the psalm, out of which I have taken my text, with the fourteenth, with the fifty-third, and particularly with the tenth, and you will perceive, that the prophet confounds them, who say in their hearts, *there is no God*, with those, who say, *God hath forgotten; he hideth his face, he will never see it*, Psal. xli.

In effect, although the last of these doctrines may be maintained without admitting the first, yet the last is no less essential to religion than the first. And although a man may be a deist, and an epicurean, without being an atheist, yet, the system of an atheist is no more odious to God than that of an epicurean, and that of a deist.

I shall, therefore, make but one man of these different men, and, after the example of the prophet, I shall attack him with the same arms. In order to justify the titles, that he gives an infidel, I shall attack,

- I. His taste.
- II. His policy.
- III. His indocility.
- IV. His logic, or to speak more properly, his way of reasoning.
- V. His morality.
- VI. His conscience.
- VII. His politeness, and knowledge of the world.

In all these reflections, which I shall proportion to the length of these exercises, I shall pay more regard to the genius of our age than to that of the times of the prophet: and I shall do this the rather, because we cannot determine on what occasion the psalm was composed, of which the text is a part.

I. If you consider the *taste*, the discernment and choice of the people, of whom the prophet speaks, you will see, he had a great right to denominate them *most brutish and foolish*. What

an excess must a man have attained, when he hates a religion, without which he cannot but be miserable! Who, of the happiest of mankind, doth not want the succour of religion? What disgraces at court! What mortifications in the army! What accidents in trade! What uncertainty in science! What bitterness in pleasure! What injuries in reputation! What inconstancy in riches! What disappointments in projects! What infidelity in friendship! What vicissitudes in fortune! Miserable man! What will support thee under so many calamities? What miserable comforters are the passions in these sad periods of life? How inadequate is philosophy itself, how improper is Zeno, how unequal are all his followers to the task of calming a poor mortal, when they tell him, "Misfortunes are inseparable from human nature. No man should think himself exempt from any thing, that belongs to the condition of mankind. If maladies be violent, they will be short; if they be long, they will be tolerable. A fatal necessity prevails over all mankind; complaints and regrets cannot change the order of things. A generous soul should be superior to all events, it should despise a tyrant, defy fortune, and render itself insensible to pain." Tolerable reflections in a book, plausible arguments in a public auditory! But weak reflections, vain arguments, in a bed of infirmity, while a man is suffering the pain of the gout, or the stone!

O! how necessary is religion to us in these fatal circumstances! It speaketh to us in a manner infinitely more proper to comfort us under our heaviest afflictions! Religion saith to you, "Out of the mouth of the Most High proceedeth evil and good," Lam. iii. 38: "He formeth light and createth darkness; he maketh peace, and createth evil," Isa. xlv. 7. "Shall there

there be evil in the city, and the Lord hath not done it?" Amos iii. 6. Religion tells you, that if God afflict you, it is for your own advantage; it is, that, being uneasy on earth, you may take your sight toward heaven; that "your light affliction, which is but for a moment, may work for you a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;" 2 Cor. iv. 17. Religion bids you "not to think it strange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you, as though some stranger thing happened unto you," 1 Pet. iv. 12. but to believe, that "the trial of your faith, being much more precious than that of gold, which perisheth, will be found unto praise, and honor, and glory, at the appearing of Jesus Christ," chap. 1. 7.

But religion is above all necessary in the grand vicissitude, in the fatal point, to which all the steps of life tend, I mean, at the hour of death. For, at length, after we have rustled into all pleasures, after we have sung well, danced well, feasted well, we must die, we must die. And what, pray, except religion, can support a man, struggling with *the king of terrors*? Job xviii. 14. A man, who sees his grandeur abased, his fortune distributed, his connections dissolved, his senses benumbed, his grave dug, the world retreating from him, his bones hanging on the verge of the grave, and his soul divided between the horrible hope of sinking into nothing, and the dreadful fear of falling into the hands of an angry God.

In sight of these formidable objects, fall, fall, ye bandages of infidelity! ye veils of obscurity and depravity! and let me perceive how necessary religion is to man. It is that, which sweetens the bitterest of all bitters. It is that, which disarms the most invincible monster. It is that, which transformeth the most frightful of all objects, into an object of gratitude and joy. It is that, which calms the conscience, and conquers

the fact. It is that, which presents to the dying believer another being, another life, another economy, other objects, and other hopes. It is that, which, "wipes the outward man peritheth, reneweth the inward man day by day." 2 Cor. iv. 16. It is that, which dissipates the horrors of the valley of the shadow of death, Psal. xiii. 3. It is that, which cleaves the clouds in the sight of a departing Stephen; tells a converted thief, *today shalt thou be in paradise*; bids a sinner and cries to all true penitents, *Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord*, Rev. xiv. 13.

II. Having taken the unbelieving libertine on his own interest, I take him on the public interest, and, having attacked his taste, and discernment, I attack his *policy*. An infidel is a disturber of public peace, who, by undertaking to sap the foundations of religion, undermines those of society. *Society cannot subsist without religion*. If plausible objections may be formed against this proposition, it is because opponents have had the art of disguising it. To explain it, is to preclude the sophisms, which are objected against it. Permit us to lay down a few explanatory principles.

First. When we say, *Society cannot subsist without religion*, we do not comprehend in our proposition all the religions in the world. The proposition includes only those religions, which retain the fundamental principles, that constitute the base of virtue; as the immortality of the soul, a future judgment, a particular Providence. We readily grant, there may be in the world a religion worse than atheism: for example, any religion, that should command its votaries to kill, to assassinate, to betray. And, as we readily grant this truth to those, who take the pains to maintain it, so whatever they oppose to us, taken from the religions of pagans, which were hurtful

harmful to society, is only vain declamation, that proves nothing against us.

Secondly. When we affirm, *Society cannot subsist without religion*, we do not pretend, that religion, which retains articles false to society, may not so mix these articles with other principles pernicious to it, that they may appear at first sight worse than atheism. We affirm only, that to take the whole of such a religion, is to reap advantageous to society to have it, than to be destitute of it. All objections that is objected against our proposition, concerning these wars, cruelties, and persecutions, which were caused by superstition, all this is only vain sophistry, which doth not affect our thesis in the least.

Thirdly. When we say, *Society cannot subsist without religion*, we do not say, that religion, even the purest religion, may not cause some disorders in society: but we affirm only, that these disorders, however numerous, cannot counterbalance the benefits, which religion produces to it. So that all objections, taken from the troubles, which war for truth may have produced in some circumstances, are only vain objections, that cannot weaken our proposition.

Fourthly. When we affirm, *Society cannot subsist without religion*, we do not affirm, that all the virtues, which are displayed in society, proceed from religious principles: so that all just magistrates are just for their love of equity: that all grave ecclesiastics are serious, because they resign their character: that all chaste women are chaste from a principle of love to virtue: human motives we freely grant, give prevail instead of heaven. We affirm only, that religious principles are infinitely more proper to regulate society than human motives. Many persons, we maintain, do actually govern their conduct by religious principles, and society would

be

be inseparably more irregular; were there no religion in it. That list of virtues, therefore, which only education and constitution produce, doth not so all affect the principle, which we are endeavoring to establish; and he, who takes his objections from it, hath but beat the air.

Lastly, *W*hen we affirm, *God'sy cannot subsist without religion*, we do not say, that all atheists and deists ought therefore to abandon themselves to all sorts of vices: nor that they who have embraced atheism; if indeed there have been any such, were always the most wicked of mankind. Many people of these characters, we own, lived in a regular manner. We affirm only, that irreligion, of itself, openeth a door to all sorts of vices; and that men are so formed; that their disorders would increase, were they to disbelieve the doctrines of the existence of a God, of judgment, and of Providence. All the examples, therefore, that are alledged against us, of a Diogenes, of a Theodorus, of a Hippias, of a Numa, of some societies, real, or chimerical, who, it is pretended, led a regular lives without the aid of religion; all these examples, I say, make nothing against our hypothesis.

These explanations being granted, we maintain, that no politician can succeed in the design of uniting men in one society, without supposing the truth and reality of religion. For, if there be no religion, each member of society may do what he pleaseth; and then each would give a loose to his passions; each would employ his power in crushing the weak, his cunning in deceiving the simple; his eloquence in seducing the credulous; his credit in ruining commerce; his authority in distressing the whole with horror and terror, and carnage and blood. Frightful disorders is their nature; but necessary on principles of infidelity. For if you suppose, these disorders may be prevented, their prevention must be

be attributed, either to private interest, to worldly honor, or to human laws.

But private interest cannot supply the place of religion. True, were all men to agree to obey the precepts of religion, each would find his own account in his own obedience. But it does not depend on an individual to oppose a popular torrent, to reform the public, and to make a new world: and, while the world continues in its present state, he will find a thousand circumstances, in which virtue is incompatible with private interest.

Nor can worldly honor supply the place of religion. For what is worldly honor? It is a superficial virtue; an art, that one man possesseth; of disguising himself from another; of deceiving politely; of appearing virtuous, rather than of being actually so. If you extend the limits of worldly honor further, if you make it consist in that purity of conscience, and in that rectitude of intention, which are in effect firm and solid foundations of virtue, you will find, either that this is only a fine idea of what almost nobody is capable of, or, if I may be allowed to say so, that the virtues, which compose your complex idea of worldly honor, are really branches of religion.

Finally, Human laws cannot supply the place of religion. To whatever degree of perfection they may be improved, they will always favour in three things of the imperfection of the legislators.

1. They will be imperfect in their substance. They may prohibit, indeed, enormous crimes: but they cannot reach refined irregularities, which are not the less capable of troubling society for appearing less atrocious. They may forbid murder, theft, and adultery: but they can neither forbid avarice, anger, nor concupiscence. They will avail in the preserving and

disposing of property; they may command the payment of taxes to the crown, and of debts to the merchant; the cultivation of sciences, and liberal arts; but they cannot ordain patience, meekness, and love; and, you will grant, a society, in which there is neither patience, meekness, nor love, must needs be an unhappy society.

Human laws will be weak in their motives. The rewards, which they offer, may be forborne; for men may do without them; the punishments, which they inflict, may be suffered; and, there are some particular cases, in which they, who derogate from their authority, may advance their own interest more than, if they constantly and scrupulously submit to it.

8. Human laws will be restrained in their extent. Kings, tyrants, masters of the world, know the art of freeing themselves from them. The laws avenge us on an insignificant chief, whom the pain of hunger and the fear of death tempted to break open our houses, to rob us of a trifling sum; but who will avenge us of magnificent thieves? For, my brethren, some men, in court-cabinets, in dedicatory epistles, in the sermons of flatterers, and in the prologues of poets, are called conquerors, heroes, demi-gods; but in this pulpit, in this church, in the presence of the God, who bleth this house, and who regardeth not the appearances of men, you conquerors, you heroes, you demi-gods, are often nothing but thieves and incendiaries. Who shall avenge us of those men, who, at the head of a hundred thousand slaves, ravage the whole world; pillage on the right hand and on the left, violate the most sacred rights, and overwhelm society with injustice and oppression? Who doth not perceive the insufficiency of human laws on this article, and the absolute necessity of religion?



III. The infidel carries his infidelity to the utmost degree of extravagance, by undertaking alone to oppose all mankind, and by undecisively preferring his own judgment above that of the whole world, who, excepting a small number, have unanimously embraced the truths, which he rejects.

This argument, taken from unanimous consent, furnisheth in favor of religion, either a bare presumption, or a real demonstration, according to the different faces, under which it is presented.

It furnisheth a proof, perhaps more than presumptive, when it is opposed to the objections, which an unbelieving philosopher alledgeth against religion. For, although the faith of a rational man ought not to be founded on a plurality of suffrages, yet the unanimity of opinion is respectable, when it hath three characters.

1. *When an opinion prevails in all places.* Prejudice varies with climates, and whatever depends on human caprice, differs in France, and in Spain, in Europe, and in Asia, according as the inhabitants of each country have their blood hot or cold; their imagination strong or weak.
2. *When an opinion prevails at all times.* Prejudices change with the times; years instruct; and experience corrects errors, which ages have rendered venerable.
3. *When an opinion is contrary to the passions of men.* A prejudice, that controls human passions, can scarce be of any long duration. The interest that a man hath in discovering his mistake, will put him on using all his educators to develop a delusion. These three characters agree to crush only.

I am aware, that some pretend to enervate this argument by the testimonies of some ancient historians, and by the relations of some modern travellers, who tell us of some individuals, and of some whole societies, who are

definite of the knowledge of God, and of religion.

Now, in order to a solid reply, we arrange the atheists, and deists, who are opposed to us, in three different classes. The first consists of philosophers, the next of the senseless populace, and the last of profligate persons. Philosophers, if you regard closely to the matter, will appear, at least, the greatest part of them, will appear, to have been accused of having no religion, only because they had a purer religion than the rest of their fellow citizens. They would not admit a plurality of gods, they were, therefore, accused of believing no God. The infidelity of the senseless populace, is favorable to our argument. We affirm, wherever there is a spark of reason, there is also a spark of religion. Is it astonishing that they, who have renounced the former, should renounce the latter also? As to the profligates, who extinguish their own little light, we say of them, with a modern writer, *It is glorious to religion to have enemies of this character.*

But let us see, whether this unanimous consent, which hath afforded us a presumption in favor of religion, will furnish us with a demonstration against those who oppose it.

Authority ought never to prevail over our minds against a judgment, grounded on solid reasons, and received on a cool examination. But authority, especially an authority founded on unanimity of sentiments, ought always to sway our minds in regard to a judgment formed without solid reasons, without examination, and without discussion. No man deserves to be called the most foolish, and the most brutish among the people,

Mr. Saaria follows the reading of the French version; *les plus brutaux, most brutish*. This is perfectly agreeable to the original, for the Hebrew forms the superlative degree by prefixing the letter *bet* to a noun-substantive, which follows an adjective, as here,

people, so much as those men, who, being as the greatest number of infidels are, without study, and without knowledge; who, without desiring to weigh, and even without condescending to hear the reasons, on which all the men in the world, except a few, found the doctrine of the existence of God, and of Providence, give themselves an air of infidelity, and insolently say, Mercury Trismegistus, Zoroaster, Pythagoras, Aristotle, Socrates, Plato, Seneca; moreover, Moses, Solomon, Paul, and the apostles, taught such and such doctrines: but, for my part, I am not of their opinion. And on what ground pray, do you reject the doctrines, which have been defended by such illustrious men? Do you know, that, of all characters, there is not one so difficult to sustain as that which you affect? For, as you deny the most common notions, the clearest truths, sentiments, which are the most generally received, if you would maintain an appearance of propriety of character, you must be a superior genius. You must make profound researches, digest immense volumes, and discuss many an abstract question. You must learn the art of evading demonstrations, of pillaging sophisms, of parrying every possible objection, that from all parts will be taken at you. But you, contemptible genius! you idiot! you, who hardly know how to arrange two words without offending against the rules of grammar, or to associate two ideas without shocking common sense, how do you expect to sustain a character, which the greatest geniuses are incapable of supporting?

IV. Yet, as no man is so unreasonable as not to profess to reason; and as no man takes up a notion

Cant. i. 8. Prov. xxx. 30. hominum brutissimi; hominum stupidiissimi; totius hujus populi stupidissimi; &c. commentators.

action so eagerly as not to give himself an hour's sleep in no other a mature deliberation; we must talk to the judge as to a philosopher, who always follows the dictates of reason, and argues by principles and consequences. Well then let us examine his logic, or, as I said before, his way of reasoning; his way of reasoning, you will see is his brutality; and his logic, confirms his extravagance.

In order to comprehend this, we go in the most exact and equitable balance, the arguments of our prophet: "He, that plucketh the ear, shall he not hear? He, that formed the eye, shall he not see? He, that chastiseth the hearer, shall he not be corrected? He, that teacheth man knowledge, shall he not be known?" These are, in brief, three sources of evidences, which supply the whole of religion with proof. The first are taken from the works of nature: He, who plucketh the ear: He, who formed the eye: The second are taken from the economy of Providence: He, that chastiseth the hearer: The third are taken from the history of the church: He, that teacheth man knowledge.

The first are taken from the wonderful works of nature. The prophet alledgeth out two examples; the one is that of the ear, the other that of the eye. None can communicate what he hath not, is the most incontestible of all principles. He, who communicates faculties to beings, whom he createth, must needs possess whatever is most noble in such faculties. He, who empowered creatures to hear, must himself hear. He, who imparted the faculty of discerning objects, must needs himself discern them. Consequently, there is great extravagance in saying, *The Lord shall not see, neither shall the God of Jacob regard it.*

The same argument, which the structure of our ears, and that of our eyes, affords us, we desire

derive all from all the wonderful works of the Creator. The Creator possesses all those great and noble excellencies, in a supreme degree, the faint shadows of which he hath communicated to creatures. On this principle, what is their capacity to form of the Creator? From what a profound abyss of power must those boundless spaces have proceeded, that lamentable extent, in which imagination is lost, those vast bodies, that surround us, those luminous globes, those flaming spheres, which revolve in the heavens, along with all the other works, that compose this universe? From what an abyss of wisdom must the successions of seasons, of day, and of night, have proceeded, those glittering stars, so exact in their courses, and so punctual in their duration; along with all the different secret springs in the universe, which with the utmost accuracy answer their design? From what an abyss of intelligence must rational creatures come, beings, who constitute the glory of the intelligent world; profound politicians, who pry into the most intricate folds of the human heart; generals, who diffuse themselves through a whole army, animating with their eyes, and with their voices, the various regiments, which compose their forces; admirable geographers, who develop the mysteries of nature, rising into the heavens by dioptrics, descending into the deepest subterranean abysses; quitting continental confinement by the art of navigation; men, who cross the waves, and, in spite of the winds, contend with the rocks, and direct a few planks fastened together to sail to the more distant climes? Who can refuse to the author of all these wonderful works the faculty of seeing and hearing?

But I do not pretend to deny, an infidel will say, that all these wonderful works owe their existence to a Supreme cause; or that the Supreme Being, by whom alone they exist, doth not

not himself possess all possible perfection. But I affirm, that the Supreme Being is so great, and so exalted, that his elevation, and inconceivable excellence, prevent him from casting his eyes down to the earth, and paying any regard to what a creature so mean and so indigent as man performs. A Being of infinite perfection, does he interest himself in my conduct? Will he stoop to examine, whether I retain or discharge the wages of my servants? Whether I be regular or irregular in my family? and so on. A king, surrounded with magnificence, and pomp, holding in his powerful hands the reins of his empire; a king, employed in weighing reasons of state, in equipping his fleets, and in levying his armies; will he concern himself with the demarches of a few worms crawling beneath his feet?

But this comparison of God to a king, and of men to worms, is absurd and inconclusive. The economy of Providence, and the history of the church, in concert with the wonderful works of nature, discover to us ten thousand differences between the relations of God to men, and those of a king to worms of the earth. No king hath given intelligent souls to worms: but God hath given intelligent souls to us. No king hath proved, by ten thousand avenging strokes, and by ten thousand glorious rewards, that he observed the conduct of worms: but God, by ten thousand glorious recompenses, and by ten thousand vindictive punishments, hath proved his attention to the conduct of men. No king hath made a covenant with worms: but God hath entered into covenant with us. No king hath commanded worms to obey him: but God, we affirm, hath ordained our obedience to him. No king can procure eternal felicity to worms: but God can communicate endless happiness to us. A king, although he be a king, is yet a man: his

his mind is little and contracted, yet infinitely contracted; it would be absurd, that he, being called to govern a kingdom, should fill his capacity with trifles: But is this your notion of the Deity? The direction of the sun, the government of the world, the formation of myriads of beings; which live through universal nature, the management of the whole universe, cannot exhaust that intelligence, who is the object of our adoration and praise. While his thoughts include, in their boundless compass, all real and all possible beings, his eyes survey every individual, as if each were the sole object of his attention.

These arguments being thus stated, either our infidel must acknowledge, that they, at least, render probable the truth of religion in general, and of this theistia particular, *God regardeth the actions of men*: for he refuseth to acknowledge it. If he refuse to acknowledge it; if he seriously affirm, that all these arguments, very far from arising to demonstration, do not even afford a probability in favor of religion; then he is an idiot, and there remains no other argument to propose to him, than that of our prophet, *Thou fool, when wilt thou be wise?*

I even question whether any unbeliever could ever persuade himself of what he endeavors to persuade others; that is, that the assemblage of truths, which constitute the body of natural religion; that the heavy strokes of justice avenging vice, and the extatic rewards accompanying virtue, which appear in Providence; that the accomplishment of numerous prophecies; that the operation of countless miracles, which are related in authentic histories of the church: no, I cannot believe, that any infidel could even persuade himself to think, that all this train of argument doth not form a probability against a system of infidelity and atheism.

But if the power and the splendor of truth force his consent; if he be obliged to own, that, although my arguments are not demonstrative, they are, however, in his opinion, probable; then, with the prophet, I say to him, *O thou most brutish among the people!*

V. Why? Because in comparing his logic with his *moralisy*, (and this is my fifth article) I perceive, that nothing but an excess of brutality can unite these two things. Hear how he reasons. "It is probable, not only that there is a God, but also that this God regardeth the actions of men, that he reserves to himself the punishment of those, who follow the suggestions of vice, and the rewarding of them, who obey the laws of virtue. The system of irreligion is counterbalanced by that of religion. Perhaps irreligion may be well grounded: but perhaps religion may be so. In this state of uncertainty, I will direct my conduct on the principle, that irreligion is well grounded, and that religion hath no foundation. *I will break in pieces*, ver. 5. (this was the language, according to our psalmist, of the unbelievers of his time) *I will break in pieces the people of God; I will afflict his heritage; I will slay the widow and the stranger; or, to speak agreeably to the genius of our own time, I will spend my life in pleasure, in gratifying my sensual appetites, in avoiding what would check me in my course, in a word, in living as if I were able to demonstrate either that there was no God, or that he paid no regard to the actions of men.*" Ought he not, rather, on the contrary, as his mind is in a state of uncertainty between both, to attach himself to that, which is the most safe? Ought he not to say? "I will so regulate my conduct, that, if there be a God, whose existence, indeed, I doubt, but, however, am not able to disprove: If God pay any regard to the actions of men, which



which I question, but cannot deny; he may not condemn me." Judge, ye christians! men, who can thus brutally insult a dark futurity, and the bare possibility of those punishments, which religion denounceth against the wicked; such men, are they not, either the most foolish, or the most brutish, among the people? "Understand, ye most brutish among the people! Ye fools! When will ye be wise?"

VI. I would attack *the conscience* of the libertine, and terrify him with the language of my text. "He, who teacheth man knowledge, shall not be correct?" That is to say, "He, who gave you laws, shall not he regard your violation of them?" The persons whom I attack, I am aware, have defied us to find the least vestige of what is called conscience in them. But had you thoroughly examined yourselves, when you set us at defiance on this article? Have you been as successful, as you pretend to have been, in your daring enterprize of freeing yourselves entirely from the terrors of conscience? Is this light quite extinct? This interior master, doth he dictate nothing to you? This rask of the Almighty, doth it never force you to confess what you would willingly deny? Are your knees so firm, that they never smite together with dread and horror?

The question, concerning the possibility of entirely freeing a man from the empire of conscience, is a matter of fact. We think we have reason for affirming, that no man can bring himself to such a state. You pretend to be yourselves a demonstration to the contrary. You are, you declare, perfectly free from the attacks of conscience. This is a fact, and I grant it; I take your word. But here is another fact, in regard to which we ought to believe in our turn, and on which our word is worth as much as yours. This is it. We have seen a great  
number.

number of sick people; we have attended a great number of dying people. Among these, to whom, in the course of our ministry, we have been called, we have met with all sorts of characters. We have visited some, who once were what you profess to be now; people; who boasted of having freed themselves from vulgar errors, from the belief of a God, a religion, a hell, a heaven, and of saying, when they abandoned themselves to the utmost excesses, as you say, *The Lord shall not see; neither shall the God of Jacob regard it.* But we have never met with a single individual, no, not one, who hath not contradicted himself at the approach of death. It is said some have done this. For our parts, we have never met with any such; we have never attended one, who hath not proved by his example, that you will contradict yourselves also. We have often visited those, who have renounced all their systems, and have cursed their infidelity a thousand, and a thousand times. We have visited many, who have required the aid of that very religion, which they had ridiculed. We have often seen those, who have called superstition to assist religion; and who have turned pale, trembled, and shaken, at the bare sight of our habit, before they had heard the sentence, which God pronounced by our mouths. But we have never seen an individual, no, not one, who died in his pretended scepticism. It remains with you to account for these facts. You are to inquire, whether you yourselves will be more courageous. It belongs to you to examine, whether you can bear those dying agonies, those devouring regrets, those terrible misgivings, which made your predecessors unsay all, and discover as much cowardice at death, as they had discovered brutality in their lives!

VII. Perhaps you have been surprized, my brethren, that we have reserved the weakest of  
our

our attacks for the last. Perhaps you object, that motives, taken from what is called *politeness*, and a *knowledge of the world*, can make no impressions on the minds of those, who did not feel the force of our former attacks. It is not without reason, however, that we have placed this last. Libertines and infidels often pique themselves on their *gentility*, and *good breeding*. They frequently take up their system of infidelity, and pursue their course of profaneness, merely through their false notions of gentility. Reason, they think, too scholastic, and faith, pedantry. They imagine, that, in order to distinguish themselves in the world, they must affect neither to believe nor to reason.

Well! you *accomplished gentleman!* do you know what the world thinks of you? The prophet tells you; but it is not on the authority of the prophet only, it is on the opinions of your fellow citizens, that I mean to persuade you. You are considered in the world as the *most brutish of mankind*. *Understand, ye most brutish among the people!* What is an *accomplished gentleman?* What is *politeness* and *good breeding?* It is the art of accommodating one's self to the genius of that society, and of seeming to enter into the sentiments of that company, in which we are; of appearing to honor what they honor; of respecting what they respect; and of paying a regard even to their prejudices, and their weaknesses. On these principles, are you not the *most rudest and most unpolished of mankind?* Or, to repeat the language of my text, are you not the *most brutish among the people?* You live among people, who believe a God, and a religion; among people, who were educated in these principles, and who desire to die in these principles; among people, who have, many of them, sacrificed their reputation, their ease, and their fortune, to religion. Moreover, you live

in a society, the foundations of which sink with those of religion, so that were the latter undermined, the former would, therefore, be sunk. All the members of society are interested in supporting this edifice, which you are endeavoring to destroy. The magistrate commands you not to publish principles that tend to the subversion of his authority. The people request you not to propagate opinions, which tend to subject them to the passions of a magistrate, who will imagine, he hath no judge superior to himself. This distressed mother, mourning for the loss of her only son, prays you not to deprive her of the consolation, which she derives from her present persuasion, that the son, whom she laments, is in possession of immortal glory. That sick man beseecheth you not to disabuse him of an error, that sweetens all his sorrows. Yon dying man begs you would not rob him of his only hope. The whole world conjures you not to establish truths, (even supposing they were truths, an hypothesis which I deny and detest) the whole world conjures you not to establish truths, the knowledge of which would be fatal to all mankind. In spite of so many voices, in spite of so many prayers, in spite of so many intreaties, and among so many people interested in the establishment of religion; to affirm that religion is a fable, to oppose it with eagerness and obstinacy, to try all your strength, and to place all your glory, in destroying it: What is this but the height of rudeness, brutality, and madness? "Understand, ye most brutish among the people! Ye fools! When will ye be wise?"

Let us put a period to this discourse. We come to you, my brethren! When we preach against characters of these kinds we think, we read what passes in your hearts. You congratulate yourselves, for the most part, for not being of the number, for detesting infidelity, and for  
 respecting

respecting religion. But shall we tell you, my brethren? How odious soever the men are, whom we have described, we know others more odious still. There is a restriction in the judgment, which the prophet forms of the first, when he calls them in the text, *The most foolish, and the most brutish among the people*; and there are some men, who surpass them in brutality and extravagance.

Do not think we exceed the truth of the matter, or that we are endeavoring to obtain your attention by paradoxes. Really, I speak as I think; I think, there is more ingenuousness, and even, (if I may venture to say so) a less fund of turpitude in men, who, having resolved to roll on with the torrent of their passions, endeavor to persuade themselves, either, that there is no God, or that he pays no regard to the actions of men; than in those, who, believing the existence, and providence of God, live as if they believed neither. Infidels were not able to support, in their excesses, the ideas of an injured benefactor, of an angry Supreme Judge, of an eternal salvation neglected, of daring hell, *a lake burning with fire and brimstone, and smoke ascending up for ever and ever*, Rev. xxi. 8. and xiv. 11. In order to give their passions a free scope, they found it necessary to divert their attention from all these terrifying objects, and to efface such shocking truths from their minds.

But you! who believe the being of a God! You! who believe yourselves under his eye, and who insult him every day without repentance, or remorse! You! who believe, God holds thunder in his hand to crush sinners, and yet live in sin! You! who think, there are devouring flames, and chains of darkness, and yet presumptuously brave their horrors! You! who believe the immortality of your souls, and yet occupy yourselves

yourself about nothing but the present life !  
 What a front ! What a brazen front is yours !

You consider a revelation proceeding from heaven, and supported by a thousand authentic proofs. But, if your faith be well grounded, how dangerous is your condition ! For, after all, the number of evidences, who attest the religion, which you believe, this number of witnesses depose the truth of the practical part of religion, as well as the truth of the speculative part. These witnesses attest, that "without holiness, no man shall see the Lord ;" that "neither thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God," Heb. xii. 14. 1 Cor. vi. 10. And consequently, these evidences attest, that you thieves, that you covetous, that you drunkards, that you revilers, that you extortioners, shall be excluded from that happy mansion. Do you reject this proposition ? Class yourselves then with infidels. Contradict nature ; contradict conscience ; contradict the church ; deny the recovery of strength to the lame ; the giving of sight to the blind ; the raising of the dead ; contradict heaven, and earth, and sea, nature, and every element. Do you admit the proposition ? Acknowledge then, that you must be irretrievably lost, unless your ideas be reformed and renewed, unless you renounce the world, that enchants and fascinates your eyes.

This, my brethren, this is your remedy. This is what we hope for you. This is that, to which we exhort you by the compassion of God, and by the great salvation, which religion presents to you. Respect this religion. Study it every day. Apply its comforts to your sorrows, and its precepts to your lives. And, joining promises to precepts, and precepts to promises, assert your christianity. Assure yourselves,

selves, then, of the peace of God in this life, and of a participation of his glory after death. God grant you this grace!—Amen.

---

## SERMON IX.

---

### THE HARMONY OF RELIGION AND CIVIL POLITY.

PROVERBS xiv. 34.

*Righteousness exalteth a Nation.*

**T**O propose maxims of civil polity in a religious assembly, to propose maxims of religion in a political assembly, are two things, which seem alike senseless and imprudent. The christian is so often distinguished from the statesman, that, it would seem, they were opposite characters. We have been lately taught to believe, that Jesus Christ, by giving us an idea of a society more noble than any we can form upon earth, hath forbidden us to prevent the miseries of this state, and to endeavor to procure the glory of it. It hath been said, that kingdoms and states cannot be elevated without violating the laws of equity, and infringing the rights of the church.

How general soever this odious notion may have been, hardly any one hath appeared openly to avow it till of late. The impudence of pleading for it was reserved for our age, for a christian admitted into your provinces, cherished in your bosom, and, O shame of our churches! appearing among protestant refugees, as the devil formerly presented himself before the Lord among the angels of God.\*

We propose to-day, my brethren, to endeavor to unravel the sophisms of this author, to shew  
you

\* Voyez Bayle, Continuat. des pensees divers.  
Tom. II. pag. 398.



you the agreement of religion with civil polity, and to establish this proposition, that as there is nothing in religion to counteract the design of a wise system of civil polity, so there is nothing in a wise system of civil government to counteract the design of the christian religion. It was the wisest of all kings, who taught us this lesson. He speaks of the *exaltation* of a nation, and this is the end of civil polity. He speaks of *righteousness*, and this is the design of religion, or rather, this is religion itself. He affirms, that the latter is the foundation of the former, and this is the agreement of religion with civil government. It is *righteousness*, saith he, it is *righteousness*, that *exalteth a nation*.

This proposition of Solomon needs both explication and proof ; and this discourse is intended to furnish both.

In our first part we will state the question, fix the sense of these terms, righteousness, exaltation ; we will set aside the various false senses, which occasioned the opinion that we intend to oppose ; and by these means we will preclude such objections as may be made against our doctrine.

In the second part, we will alledge some arguments in favour of the proposition contained in the text when properly explained, and so prove that *righteousness exalteth a nation*.

This nation is exalted, my brethren : but, allow me to say, it is not by its *righteousness*. We have not therefore chosen this text to create an opportunity of making encomiums on you : but we treat of the subject in order to fix your attention on the proper means of preserving and augmenting your elevation. Happy if our design meet with success ! Happy if we contribute, though not according to the extent of our wishes, yet according to the utmost of our ability, to the glory of this state !

I. We just now insinuated, that the false glosses put upon the maxim of the wise man were the principal causes of our backwardness to admit the truth of it. It is, therefore, important to state the question clearly.

1. When we affirm that *righteousness* and religion in general, (for it would be easy to prove that the word *righteousness* in the text is to be taken in this vague sense) I say, when we affirm that religion *exalteth a nation*, we do not mean such a religion as many imagine. We ingenuously acknowledge, and would to God the whole world acknowledged ! that neither the religion of a cruel man, nor the religion of a superstitious person, nor the religion of an enthusiast, can *exalt a nation*.

How can the religion of a *cruel* man exalt a nation? The religion of such men is too well known for the peace of Europe. Such as these, under pretence of devotion, cut a free course for their own black and inflexible passions. These arm themselves with the civil sword to destroy all, who doubt the truth of their systems; they put violence in the place of demonstration, and endeavor to establish the gospel, as if it were the Koran of Mohammed, by force and constraint. These characters, as I just now said, are too well known for the peace of Europe. Even now, while I speak, I behold many, who have suffered under such cruelty, and have opposed the strongest argument against it: No, my brethren, this is not the religion that *exalteth a nation*. Such a religion depopulates states, ruins commerce, and is a never-failing source of civil wars and intestine commotions. The religion, of which we speak, is a kind, patient, gentle religion; a religion, the grand character of which is forbearance, benevolence, and fraternal love; a religion inimical to error and heresy: but which, however, prizes the erroneous

ous and the heretic ; a religion, which exerts itself to eradicate false doctrines : but which leaves each at liberty to admit the truth ; a religion, which hath no other sword than the *sword of the Spirit*, nor any other weapon than that of the word.

How can the religion of a *superstitious* man exalt a nation ? It makes devotion degenerate into idleness, it increaseth the number of ecclesiastics, and so renders many members useless to society. It wastes, in pretendedly pious foundations, immense sums, which might have contributed to the advancement of arts and sciences. It generates scruples in the minds of statesmen, and so restrains the exercise of those fine faculties, which God created for the good of the state. It puts the casuist in the place of the prince, and the prince in the place of the casuist, the casuist on the throne, and the prince in confession at his feet. No, my brethren, this is not the religion, of which we speak. The religion, of which we speak, is opposite to superstition. It is just and solid, requiring us to "render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's," Matt. xii. 17. It prescribes bounds to sovereigns : but it requires casuists also to know their place.

How can the religion of an *enthusiast* contribute to the exaltation of a nation ? The soul of an enthusiast is always agitated with visions and reveries. He incessantly thrusts himself into the company of the great, in order to inspire them with his own spirit, and to breathe into them the soul of enthusiasm. He endeavors to animate governors, called to watch over a state, and to conduct the people to national happiness, with his wild schemes. He is always talking of extirpating the reformation, and thundering excommunications against those, who do not enter into his extravagant projects ; his anathemas

are as extravagant and wild as the projects themselves. This is not the religion, of which we speak. The religion, that *exalteth a nation*, is derived from the treasures of the Divine Intelligence ; it was formed in the mind of that Supreme Spirit, from whom wisdom proceeds, as the stream flows from the spring : and not in the ideas of a disordered brain, nor in the dreams of a visionary.

We wish you to take religion and righteousness in the *true* sense of the terms. This is our first elucidation. This is the first precaution, that must be used to understand the state of the question.

2. We do not mean to affirm, that the true religion is so necessary in *all* its doctrines, and in *all* the extent of its precepts, that there are no instances of the flourishing of societies, which have not been wholly regulated by it. We acknowledge that some societies of men, who have been only partially governed by its maxims, have enjoyed long and glorious advantages upon the theatre of the world ; either because their false religions contained some principles of rectitude in common with the true religion ; or because God, in order to animate such people to practise some virtues, superficial indeed, but, however, necessary to the being of society, annexed success to the exercise of them ; or because he prospered them to answer some secret designs of his wisdom ; or because, finally, rectitude was never so fully established on earth as to preclude injustice from enjoying the advantages of virtue, or virtue from suffering the penalties of vice. However it were, we allow the fact, and we only affirm, that the most sure method, that a nation can take to support and exalt itself, is to follow the laws of righteousness and the spirit of religion. This is a second elucidation tending to state the question clearly.

3. We

3. We do not affirm, that in every particular case religion is more successful in procuring some temporal advantage than the violation of it; so that to consider society only in this point of light, and to confine it to this particular case independently of all other circumstances, religion yields the honor of posterity to injustice. We allow, some state crimes have been successful, and have been the steps, by which some people have acquired worldly glory. We even allow, that virtue hath sometimes been an obstacle to grandeur. We only affirm, that, if a nation be considered in every point of light, and in all circumstances, if all things be weighed; it will be found, that the more a society practise virtue, the more prosperity it will enjoy. We affirm, that the more it abandons itself to vice, the more misery will it sooner or later suffer; so that the very vice, which contributed to its exaltation, will produce its destruction; and the very virtue, which seems at first to abase it, will, in the end, exalt it to glory. This is a third elucidation.

4. We do not mean by exaltation, that sort of elevation, at which worldly heroes, or rather tyrants, aspire. We acknowledge, that, if by exalting a nation be understood an elevation extending itself beyond the limits of rectitude, an elevation not directed by justice and good faith, an elevation consisting of the acquisitions of wanton and arbitrary power, an elevation obliging the whole world to submit to a yoke of slavery, and so becoming an executioner of divine vengeance on all mankind; we allow, that in this sense exaltation is not an effect of righteousness. But, if we understand by exalting a nation whatever governs with gentleness, negotiates with success, attacks with courage, defends with resolution, and constitutes the happiness of a people, whatever God always beholds with

with favorable eyes ; if this be what is meant by *exalting a nation*, we affirm, a nation is exalted only by righteousness.

5. In fine, we do not affirm, that the prosperity of such a nation would be so perfect as to exclude all untoward circumstances. We only say, that the highest glory, and the most perfect happiness, which can be enjoyed by a nation in a world, where, after all, there is always a mixture of adversity with prosperity, are the fruits of righteousness. These elucidations must be retained, not only because they explain the thesis, which we are supporting, and because they are the ground of what we shall hereafter say : but also because they serve to preclude such objections, to solve such difficulties, and to unravel such sophisms, as the author, whom we oppose, urges against us.

One argument against us is taken from the abuses, which religion hath caused in society : but this objection is removed, by taking away false ideas of religion. A second objection is taken from the case of some idolatrous nations, who, though they were strangers to revealed religion, have yet arrived at a great height of worldly glory : but this objection is removed by our second elucidation. A third objection is taken from some particular case, in which vice is of more advantage to a state than virtue : but this objection falls before the manner in which we have stated the question. A fourth objection is taken from extravagant notions of glory : but this objection is removed by distinguishing true exaltation from false. Finally, an objection is taken from the evils, which the most virtuous societies suffer, and we have acknowledged, that this world will always be to public bodies what it is to individuals, a place of misery, and we have contented ourselves with affirming, that the most solid happiness, which can be enjoyed here,  
hath

hath righteousness for its cause. The narrow limits, to which we are confined, will not allow us to carry our reflections any further. They, however, who meditate profoundly on the matter, will easily perceive that all these objections are, if not abundantly refuted, at least sufficiently precluded by our explications.

We will now proceed to shew the grounds of the maxim of the wise man. We will open six sources of reflections; an idea of society in general; the constitution of each government in particular; the nature of arts and sciences; the conduct of providence; the promises of God himself; and the history of all ages. These articles make up the remainder of this discourse.

II. 1. Let us first form an idea of *society in general*, and consider the motives, which induced mankind to unite themselves in society, and to fix themselves in one place. By doing this, we shall perceive, that *righteousness* is the only thing that can render nations happy. Every individual hath infinite wants; but only finite faculties to supply them. Each individual of mankind hath need of knowledge to inform him, laws to direct him, property to support him, medicine to relieve him, aliments to nourish him, clothing and lodging to defend himself against the injuries of the seasons. How easy would it be to enlarge this catalogue! Similar interests form a similar design. Divers men unite themselves together, in order that the industry of all may supply the wants of each.— This is the origin of societies and public bodies of men.

It is easy to comprehend, that, in order to enjoy the blessings proposed by this assemblage, some fixed maxims must be laid down and inviolably obeyed. It will be necessary for all the members of this body to consider themselves as naturally equal, that by this idea they may be inclined to afford each other mutual succor. It will be ne-

cessary that they should be sincere to each other, lest deceit should serve for a vail to conceal the fatal designs of some from the eyes of the rest. It will be necessary for all to observe the rules of rigid equity, that so they may fulfil the contracts which they bound themselves to perform, when they were admitted into this society. It will be necessary, that esteem and benevolence should give life and action to righteousness. It will be necessary, that the happiness of all should be preferred before the interest of one; and that in cases where public and private interests clash, the public good should always prevail. It will be necessary, that each should cultivate his own talents, that he may contribute to the happiness of that society, to which he ought to devote himself with the utmost sincerity and zeal.

Now, my brethren, what can be more proper to make us observe these rules, than religion, than *righteousness*? Religion brings us to feel our natural equality; it teacheth us, that we originate in the same dust, have the same God for our Creator, are all descended from the same first parent, all partake of the same miseries, and are all doomed to the same last end. Religion teacheth us sincerity to each other, that the tongue should be a faithful interpreter of the mind, that we should *“speak every man truth with his neighbor,”* Eph. iv. 25. and that, being always in the sight of the God of truth, we should never depart from the laws of truth. Religion teacheth us to be just, that we should “render to all, their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor; that whatsoever we would that men should do unto us, we should do even so unto them,” Rom. xiii. 7. Matt. vii. 12. Religion requireth us to be animated with charity, to consider each other as creatures of one God, subjects of the same king, members of one body, and heirs of the same glory.



glory. Religion requireth us to give up private interest to public good, *not to seek our own, but every one another's wealth*; it even requireth us to lay down our lives for the brethren. Thus by considering nations in these primitive views, it is righteousness alone that exalts them.

2. But all this is too vague. We proceed next to consider *each form of government in particular*. It is impracticable for all the members of society, on every pressing occasion, to assemble together and give their suffrages. Public bodies therefore agree to set apart some of their number, who are accounted the soul, the will, the determination of the whole. Some nations have committed the supreme power to one, whom they call *monarch*; this is a *monarchical* state. Others have committed supreme power to a few of their own body, called *magistrates, senators, nobles*, or some other honorable appellation; this is a republic, called in the schools an *aristocracy*. Others have diffused supreme power more equally among all the members of their society, and have placed it in all heads of families; this is a *popular government*, usually called a *democracy*. Society gives its authority and privileges into the hands of these persons; it entrusts and empowers them to make laws, to impose taxes, to raise subsidies, to make peace or declare war, to reward virtue, to punish vice; in one word, to do whatever may be beneficial to the whole society, with the felicity of which they are entrusted.

If we consider these various forms of government, we shall find, that each nation will be more or less happy in its own mode of governing, will more or less prevent the inconveniencies to which it is subject, according as it shall have more or less attachment to religion or *righteousness*.

What are the particular inconveniencies of a *monarchical* government? In what cases is monarchy fatal to the liberty, and so to the felicity,  
of

of a nation? When the monarch, instead of making the good of the people his supreme law, follows nothing but his own caprice. When he thinks himself vested with supreme power for his own glory, and not for the glory of his kingdom. When, by stretching his authority beyond its lawful bounds, he endeavors arbitrarily to dispose of the lives and fortunes of his subjects. When, in order to avenge a private quarrel, or to satiate his thirst for a glory, from which his people derive no benefit, he engageth them in bloody wars, and sacrificeth them to a vain and imaginary grandeur. When he wastes the substance of his people in superb buildings, in excessive embellishments, and in sumptuous equipages. When he imposes on them enormous tributes, and exorbitant taxes. When he is inaccessible to the widow and the orphan. When he gives himself up to indolence, and doth not study the wants of his subjects. When, though he appropriates to himself the advantages of empire, yet, in order to free himself from the fatigue of governing, he commits the reins to a rash counsellor or to an insolent favorite. When he entertains such an idea of royalty as one anciently formed, who desired it a right to do whatever we will with impunity; such an idea as that, which a mean flatterer gave of it to Alexander the Great, Do as many unjust actions as you will, impoverish your subjects by exactions, extortions, and rapines, to satisfy your luxury and ambition, it is all right, it is all lovely, because you choose to have it so.\* When, instead of being the father of his people, he strives to be the executioner, like that brutal emperor, who wished the Roman empire had but one head that he might strike it off at a blow.† These are the inconveniencies of the first kind of government.

In

\* Plutarch ad princip. indoct.

† Sueton. Calig. chap. xxx.

In what cases is the second kind of government hurtful? Is it not, when any one of the magistrates, instead of considering himself as a single member of the assembly, aims to be at the head of it? When he intrudes into office by sinister means. When he useth his power, not for the public good, but for the advancement and glory of his own family. When he is mean enough to sell his vote. When he ingratiates himself with a number of seditious people, in order to form cabals, and to engross supreme power. When he doth not take pains to inform himself of the merits of a cause, before he determine it. When he associates colleagues with himself, whose incapacity is intended to be made a foil to his own abilities, instead of calling in men more able than himself to supply his own defects. In fine, when he makes himself judge in his own cause.

Let us observe, lastly, when a *popular* government becomes hurtful. Is it not when, by a mere principle of levity, laws are made and unmade by caprice? When, under pretence of equality, a proper deference to superior understandings is refused? When intrigue and cabal give effect to evil counsels? When a powerful faction oppresses the virtuous few? When popular liberty degenerates into licentiousness and anarchy, and when the ambition of many becomes an evil, as enormous and fatal as the tyranny of one? These, and many more, are the imperfections of these three sorts of government. Need we to take up your time in proving, that all these ills are most and best precluded by religion? Do we not all recollect some scripture maxims, which would restrain these excesses? I need not, therefore, multiply quotations to prove this point. Is not each of us convinced, that, if we thus consider nations in regard to the forms of their government, it is *righteousness* alone that *exalts* them?

3. Our doctrine will appear in a clearer light still, if we proceed to examine *the liberal arts and sciences*. The more a society follows the spirit of religion, the more will religion cherish them under its fostering wing; *Jurisprudence* will flourish, because law will be disengaged from ambiguity, which perpetuates animosities; because counsellors will plead none but just causes; and because judges will never suffer themselves to be corrupted by *gifts, which blind the eyes of the wise*, but will always decide according to the spirit of the law, and the dictates of conscience.

*The military art* will flourish, because the soldier will not defraud the officer, the officer will not defraud the soldier; because both will go into the army, not merely to obtain the favor of their governors, but to please God; because, being prepared to die by an anticipated repentance, their ardor will not be restrained by the fear of falling into the hands of an angry God; because, should they have neglected to conciliate the favor of God before a battle, they would be persuaded, even in the heat of it, that the best way to please him would be to discharge the duty of their office; whereas when soldiers feel their consciences agitated, when amidst the discharge of the artillery of their enemies they discover eternal flames, when they see hell opening under their feet, and the horrors of eternal punishment succeeding those of the field of battle, they will always fight with reluctance, and endeavor to avoid future misery by fleeing away from present death.

In a virtuous state, *commerce* will flourish, because the merchant, always speaking the truth, and dealing with good faith, will attract general credit and confidence; always following the rules of wisdom and prudence, he will never engage in rash undertakings, which ruin families  
and

and subvert whole houses ; not being animated with avarice or vain glory, he will not first acquire riches by injustice, and next waste them with indiscretion ; depending on the blessings of heaven, all his labors will be enlivened with courage and joy.

In such a state, *divinity* will flourish, because each, burning with zeal for the glory of God, will carefully cultivate a science, which hath God for its object ; because, being free from a party spirit, he will receive the truth, whatever hand may present it to him ; because, by referring religion to its chief end, he will not spend his life in the pursuit of trifles ; because, full of zeal for his salvation, he will be attentive to every step towards it ; because, not being enslaved by his passions, he will not be enveloped in the darkness produced by them ; or, to express myself in the language of scripture, because, by doing *the will of God, he will know whether such and such doctrines* come from the Supreme Being, or from the preacher only, John vii. 17.

The *mechanical arts* will flourish in a virtuous state, because they, on whom God hath not bestowed genius equal to the investigation of abstract sciences, whom he hath fitted for less noble stations in society, will fill up those stations with the utmost care, and will be happy in deriving from them such advantages as they produce. Thus a just notion of arts and sciences opens to us a third source of arguments to prove the truth of our text.

4. The doctrine of *providence* opens a fourth, as others have observed. The conduct of providence, in regard to public bodies, is very different from that, which prevails in the case of individuals. In regard to the latter, providence is involved in darkness. Many times it seems to condemn virtue and crown injustice, and to leave innocence to groan in silence, and to em-  
power

power guilt to riot and triumph in public. The wicked rich man *fed sumptuously every day*, Lazarus desired in vain to be fed with the crumbs that fell from his table, Luke xvi. 19, 21. St. Paul was executed on a scaffold. Nero reigned on Cæsar's throne. And to say all in one word, Jesus Christ was born in a stable, and Herod lived and died in a palace.

But providence is directed in a different method in regard to public bodies. Prosperity in them is the effect of righteousness, public happiness is the reward of public virtue, the wisest nation is usually the most successful, and virtue walks with glory by her side. God sometimes indeed afflicts the most virtuous nations; but he doth so with the design of purifying them, and of opening new occasions to bestow larger benefits on them. He sometimes indeed prospers wicked nations; but their prosperity is an effort of his patience and long suffering, it is to give them time to prevent their destruction; yet, after all, as I said before, prosperity usually follows righteousness in public bodies, public happiness is the reward of public virtue, the wisest nation is the most successful, and glory is generally connected with virtue.

They, to whom we are indebted for this reflection, have grounded it on this reason. A day will come when Lazarus will be indemnified, and the rich man punished; St. Paul will be rewarded, and Nero will be confounded; Jesus Christ will fill a throne, and Herod will be covered with ignominy. Innocence will be avenged, justice satisfied, the majesty of the laws repaired, and the rights of God maintained.

But such retribution is impracticable in regard to public bodies. A nation cannot be punished then as a nation, a province as a province, a kingdom as a kingdom. All different sorts of government will be then abolished. One individual

vidual of a people will be put in possession of glory, while another will be covered with shame and confusion of face. It should seem, then, that providence owes to its own rectitude those times of vengeance, in which it pours all its wrath on wicked societies, sends them plagues, wars, famines; and other catastrophies, of which history gives us so many memorable examples. To place hopes altogether on worldly policy, to pretend to derive advantages from vice, and so to found the happiness of society on the ruins of religion and virtue, what is this but to insult providence?— This is to arouse that power against us, which sooner or later overwhelms and confounds vicious societies.

5. If the obscurity of the ways of providence, which usually renders doubtful the reasonings of men on its conduct, weaken the last argument, let us proceed to consider, in the next place, the declarations of God himself on this article. The whole twenty-eighth chapter of Deuteronomy, all the blessings and curses pronounced there, fully prove our doctrine. Read this tender complaint, which God formerly made concerning the irregularities of his people. "O that they were wise, that they understood this, that they would consider their latter end! How should one chase a thousand, or two put ten thousand to flight?" chap. xxxii. 29, 30. Read the affecting words, which he uttered by the mouth of his prophet, "O that my people had hearkened unto me, and Israel had walked in my ways! I should soon have subdued their enemies, and turned my hand against their adversaries. Their time should have endured forever. I should have fed them also with the finest of the wheat: and with honey out of the rock should I have satisfied them," Psalm lxxxi. 13, &c. Read the noble promises made by the ministry of Isaiah, "Thus saith the Lord thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel, I am the Lord

Lord thy God which teacheth thee to prophesy, which leadeth thee by the way thou shouldest go. O that thou hadst hearkened to my commandments! then had thy peace been as a river, and thy righteousness as the waves of the sea: thy seed also had been as the sand, and thy name should not have been cut off, nor destroyed from before me," chap. xlviii. 17, &c. Read the terrible threatenings denounced by the prophet Jeremiah, "Though Moses and Samuel stood before me, yet my mind could not be toward this people: cast them out of my sight, and let them go forth. And it shall come to pass, if they say unto thee, Whither shall we go forth? then thou shalt tell them, Thus saith the Lord, Such as are for death, to death; and such as are for the sword, to the sword; and such as are for the famine, to the famine; and such as are for the captivity, to the captivity. And I will appoint over them four kinds, saith the Lord; the sword to slay, and the dogs to tear, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the earth, to devour and destroy. For who shall have pity upon thee, O Jerusalem? or who shall bemoan thee? or who shall go aside to ask how thou doest? Thou hast forsaken me, saith the Lord, thou art gone backward: therefore will I stretch out my hand against thee, and destroy thee; I am weary of repenting," chap. xv. 1, &c. The language of our text is agreeable to all these passages; it is *righteousness*, saith the text; it is righteousness that *exalteth a nation*. Thus God speaks; moreover, thus he acts, as we shall shew you in the next article.

6. *The history of all ages* affords us another class of arguments in defence of our doctrine, and so proves the truth of it by experience.

Had ever preacher a wider or more fruitful field than this, which opens to our view in this part of our discourse? Shall we produce you a list of Egyptians, Persians, Assyrians, and Greeks,



or Romans who surpassed them all? Shall we shew you all these nations by turns exalted as they respected righteousness, or abased as they neglected it?

By what mysterious art did ancient Egypt subsist with so much glory during a period of fifteen or sixteen ages? By a benevolence so extensive, that he, who refused to relieve the wretched, when he had it in his power to assist him, was himself punished with death: by a justice so impartial, that their kings obliged the judges to take oath, that they would never do any thing against their own consciences, though they, the kings themselves, should command them: by an aversion to bad princes, so fixed, as to deny them the honors of a funeral: by invariably rendering to merit public praise, even beyond the grave; for when an Egyptian died, a session was held for the direct purpose of inquiring how he had spent his life, so that all the respect due to his memory might be paid: by entertaining such just ideas of the vanity of life, as to consider their houses as inns, in which they were to lodge as it were only for a night, and their sepulchres as habitations, in which they were to abide many ages, in which, therefore, they united all the solidity and pomp of architecture, witness their famous pyramids: by a life so laborious, that even their amusements were adapted to strengthen the body, and improve the mind: by a readiness to discharge their debts so remarkable, that they had a law, which prohibited the borrowing of money, except on condition of pledging the body of a parent for payment, a deposit so venerable, that a man, who deferred the redemption of it, was looked upon with horror: in one word, by a wisdom so profound, that Moses himself is renowned in scripture for being *learned in it*.

By

\* Diodor. Sicil. lib. i. sect. 2. Herod. lib. ii.

By what marvellous method did the Persians obtain such a distinguished place of honor in ancient history? \* By considering falsehood in the most horrid light, as a vice the meanest and most disgraceful: by a noble generosity, conferring favors on the nations, they conquered, and leaving them to enjoy all the ensigns of their former grandeur: by an universal equity, obliging themselves to publish the virtues of their greatest enemies: by observing, as an inviolable secret, state affairs, so that, to use the language of an ancient author, neither promises nor threatenings could extort it, for the ancient laws of the kingdom obliged them to be silent under pain of death: by a decorum so regular, that queens and all court ladies quitted the table as soon as ever the company began to lay aside moderation in drinking: by religiously recording noble actions, and transmitting them to posterity in public registers: by educating their children so wisely, that they were taught virtue as other nations were taught letters: by discovering no grief for such youths as died uneducated. The children of the royal family were put, at fourteen years of age, into the hands of four of the wisest and most virtuous statesmen. The first taught them the worship of the gods; the second trained them up to speak truth and practise equity; the third habituated them to subdue voluptuousness, to enjoy real liberty, to be always princes, and always masters of themselves and their own passions; the fourth inspired them with courage, and, by teaching them how to command themselves, taught them how to maintain dominion over others.

We purposely omit the noble and virtuous actions of the Assyrians, and Medes, the Greeks, and other nations, who were the glory of the ages in which they lived. But let us not pass by  
ancient

\* Herod. lib. i. iii. Plat. Alcib. i.

ancient Rome: Was ever nation more exalted? One expression of *Cæsar* will give us a just notion of their excellence. Cicero recommended a friend to him, and this was his answer: *In regard to Marcus Furius, whom you have recommended to me, I will make him king of Gaul. If you have any other friends you wish to have promoted, you may command me.*† But by what unheard-of prodigy did old Rome, composed at first of no more than three thousand inhabitants, carry conquest in less than six hundred years to the ends of the earth? Thus speaks the Emperor Julian. By what impenetrable secret did this confused mixture of vagabonds and thieves become a seminary of heroism and grandeur? By a wise docility, so that even kings sometimes submitted to the advice of individuals; witness Tullus Hostilius, who durst not decide the case of Horatius, but referred it to the people:‡ by an observation of the law so strict, that Brutus condemned his two sons to die by the hands of the public executioner, for having listened to the ambitious proposals of the Tarquins, who were conspiring to enslave the citizens, and remount the throne: by a frugality so great, that such men as Curius, Fabricius, Regulus, Æmilius, Paulus, and Mummius, these great deliverers of the Roman people, were seen to feed their own cattle, to cultivate their lands, and to live without pomp and parade: by an excellent economy, so that Atilius Regulus, who commanded a Roman army in Africa, demanded leave of the Senate to go home and provide for the wants of his family, from whom a day laborer had stolen the working tools used in cultivating his estate of

V 2

seven

\* Montaign de la grandeur Romaine, lib. ii. chap. 24.

† Cicero. Epist. ad famil. lib. vii. 5. Some copies read not Furius, but M. Orsus. See Spanheim in the *Cæsars*, page 161.

‡ Liv. lib. i. 36.

seven acres; a requisition so just, that the Senate engaged to buy tools, to cultivate his land, and to support his wife and children at the public charge: \* so far did they carry this virtue, that the elder Cato, returning from Spain to Italy, sold his horse to save the charge of freight, and usually, when he travelled, carried his own knapsack, which contained all his travelling necessaries: by an ardent love for the general good, so that every thing was reserved for the public: temples, baths, roads, aqueducts, triumphal arches, all were superb, when the national glory was in view, as all things for the use of individuals were plain: by an utter aversion to useless bravery, so that they considered in a light equally mean, the general, who exposed his person needlessly, and him, who avoided danger, when the public good rendered it necessary for him to expose himself: † by a scrupulous caution not to undertake, unjust wars; to guard against which, they had a college at Rome, where it was coolly examined, whether an intended war were just or unjust, before it was proposed to the senate and the people: ‡ by an unfathomable aversion to every species of military fraud, so that Lucius Marcius, (my brethren, how ought this idea of Pagan heroes to cover some with confusion, who ostentatiously affect to play the hero in the christian world!) Lucius Marcius, I say, having deceived Perces, king of Macedonia, by giving him false hopes of peace, and having conquered him by this stratagem, was adjudged by the senate to have violated the Roman laws, and to have swerved from the ancient customs, according to which it was a maxim to conquer by valor and not by fraud.

- If,

\* Liv. Epitom. lib. 18. Montagne de la parsimonie des anciens, lib. i. chap. 52.

† Sallust de bell. Catil. ix.

‡ Coll. des sciaax. Dion. Halic. lib. ii. Antig. Rom. lib. i. 32.

If, having shewn the cause of the prosperity of ancient nations, we were to inquire into the reasons of their decline; were we to compare the Egyptians under their wise kings with the Egyptians in a time of anarchy, the Persians victorious under Cyrus, with the Persians enervated by the luxuries of Asia, the Romans at liberty under the Consuls, with the Romans enslaved by their Emperors, we should find, that the decline of each of these nations was owing to the practice of vices opposite to the virtues which had caused its elevation: we should be obliged to acknowledge, that vain glory, luxury, voluptuousness, disunion, envy, and boundless ambition, were the hateful means of subverting states, which, in the height of their prosperity, expected, and in all appearance justly expected, to endure to the end of time: we should be obliged to allow, that some excesses, which, in certain circumstances, had contributed to exalt these nations, were, in other circumstances, the means of ruining them.

True, ambition impelled Cæsar to elevate the Republic of Rome to a pitch as high as it is possible for human grandeur to attain. Armed for the defence of the Republic, he fought for it, though less for it than for his own glory, and displayed, we grant, the Roman eagle in the furthest parts of Asia, rendered Gaul tributary, swelled the Rhine with German blood, subdued the Britons, and made all the Adriatic coasts resound the fame of his victories. But did not the same ambition impel him to excite a civil war to arm Rome against Rome, to cover the Pharsalian field with carnage and soak the ground with Roman blood, to pursue the shattered remains of Pompey's army into the heart of Africa, to give a queen, or rather a prostitute, the kingdom of Egypt, to reduce the first and most free of all nations to a state of meanness and servility beneath the most  
subject

subject of mankind? For, my brethren, what were these Romans after they had lost their liberty, and given themselves up to absolute masters? These Romans, who had given the universe law; these Roman citizens, even the meanest of them, who would have thought themselves disgraced had they mixed their blood with that of kings; these Romans, once so jealous of their liberty, have we not seen these very people under their emperors submit to vassalage so as to become a scandal even to slaves? Infamous flatterers, did not they erect altars to Claudius, Caligula, and Nero? Did not Rome hear one of its citizens address this language to the last of these monsters? "Choose, Cæsar, what place you will among the immortal gods. Will you sway the sceptre of Jupiter, or mount the chariot of Apollo? There is not a deity, who will not yield his empire to you, and count it an honor to resign in your favor.\*"

But is it necessary to quote ancient history in proof of what we have advanced, that is, that the same vices, which contribute at first to exalt a nation, in the end cause its decline and ruin? There is a NATION,† in favor of which all things seem to promise a general and lasting prosperity. It has an advantageous situation, a fruitful soil, a temperate climate, an agreeable society, an easy access, a mutual generosity, an inimitable industry, quick penetration in council, heroic courage in war, incredible success in trade, surprising dexterity in arts, indisputable reputation in sciences, an amiable toleration in religion, severity blended with sweetness, sweetness tempered with severity.

Does this nation pass the bounds? At first it acquires advantages more than nature and art had given it. The boundless ambition of the

\* Lucan, Pharsal, lib. 1.

† This sermon was preached in 1706.

the monarch inspires the subjects with a noble pride. Authority, established by despotical power, enslaves the judgments of all to the will of one. A treacherous policy at first imposes on neighboring states. Troops, impelled by a rashness at first, surmount all obstacles. Toleration is banished, the prince takes the place of God himself, and exercises his prerogative. Violating the faith of edicts, procures some present advantages. An insatiable avidity adds fortresses to fortresses, city to city, province to province, kingdom to kingdom. But where is divine providence? Where is the truth of our text, *righteousness exalteth a nation?* What pitch of grandeur can religion obtain for a people, which cannot be obtained by other means?

Stop. The objection made to our doctrine demonstrates the truth of it. The ambition of the monarch, communicated to his subjects, will there produce all the fatal effects of ambition. Despotical power, which enslaved the judgments of all to the absolute will of one, will cause the judgments of all to resist the will of one. That deceitful policy, which took neighboring states by surprize, will inspire them with distrust and precaution. Troops hurried on by rashness will find out that rashness is the high road to defeat. Toleration disallowed will disaffect the hearts of faithful subjects, and industry will flee to foreign climes. The violation of edicts will destroy confidence in all the public instruments of government. An insatiable avidity of territorial acquisitions, of possessing forts, cities, provinces, and kingdoms without number, will require more attention and greater expence than any nation can furnish. A state in this condition, will sink under the weight of its own grandeur; it will be attenuated by being expanded, and, if I may use such an expression, impoverished by its abundance. Each passion  
put

put in motion will give a shock peculiar to itself, and all together will unite in one general blow fatal to the edifice, which they had erected. A prince, by becoming an object of the admiration of the world, becomes at the same time an object of jealousy, suspicion, and terror. Hence come civil commotions and foreign wars. Hence the forming of leagues, and deep-concerted plots. Hence mortality, scarcity, and famine. Hence heaven and earth in concert against a state, that seemed to defy both earth and heaven. Hence an eternal example to justify providence in all future ages, and to demonstrate to the most obstinate the doctrine of the text, that only rectitude can procure substantial glory.

Thus, we think, we have sufficiently established our prophet's proposition: and we will finish the arguments, by which we have supported it, by giving you the character of that author, who hath taken the greatest pains to subvert it.\* He was one of those inconsistent men, whom the sweet genius cannot preserve from self-contradiction, and whose opposite qualities will always leave us in doubt, whether to place them in one extreme, or in another diametrically opposite. On the one hand, he was a great philosopher, and knew how to distinguish truth from falsehood, for he could see at once a connection of principles, and a train of consequences: on the other hand, he was a great sophister, always endeavoring to confound truth with falsehood, to wrest principles, and to force consequences. In one view, admirably learned and of fine parts, and more by the exercise of his own great sense: in another view, ignorant, or affecting to be ignorant, of the most common things, advancing arguments, which had been a thousand

\* Mr. Bayle.



thousand times refuted, and starting objections which the greatest novice in the schools durst not have mentioned without blushing. On the one hand, attacking the greatest men, opening a wide field for them to labor in, leading them into devious and rugged paths, and, if not going beyond them, giving them a world of pains to keep pace with him: on the other hand, quoting the meanest geniuses, offering a profusion of incense to them, blotting his writings with names that had never been pronounced by learned lips. On the one hand, free, at least in appearance, from every disposition contrary to the spirit of the gospel, chaste in his manners, grave in his conversation, temperate in his diet, and austere in his usual course of life: on the other, employing all the acuteness of his genius to oppose good morals, and to attack chastity, modesty, and all other christian virtues. Sometimes appealing to a tribunal of the most rigid orthodoxy, deriving arguments from the purest sources, and quoting divines of the most unsuspected soundness in the faith: at other times, travelling in the high road of heretics, reviving the objections of ancient heresiarchs, forging them new armor, and uniting in one body the errors of past ages with those of the present time. O that this man, who was endowed with so many talents, may have been forgiven by God, for the bad use he made of them! May that Jesus, whom he so often attacked, have expiated his crimes! But, though charity constrains us to hope and wish for his salvation, the honor of our holy religion obliges us publicly to declare that he abused his own understanding, to protest before heaven and earth that we disown him as a member of our reformed churches, and that we shall always consider a part of his writings as a scandal to good men, and as a pest of the church.

*We return to our prophet. Let us employ a few*

few moments in reflecting on the truths we have heard. Thanks be to God, my brethren, we have better means of knowing the *righteousness* that *exalts a nation*, and more motives to practise it, than all the nations, of whose glory we have been hearing. They had only a superficial, debased, confused knowledge of the virtues, which constitute substantial grandeur: and, as they held errors in religion, they must necessarily have erred in civil polity. God, glory be to his name! hath placed at the head of our councils the most perfect legislator, that ever held the reins of government in the world. This legislator is Jesus Christ. *His kingdom, indeed, is not of this world*, but the rules he has given us to arrive at that, are proper to render us happy in the present state. When he says, *Seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all other things shall be added to you*, Matt. vi. 33. he gives the command, and makes the promise to whole nations as well as to individuals.

Who ever carried so far as this divine legislator ideas of the virtues, of which we have been treating in several parts of this discourse, and by practising which *nations are exalted*? Who ever formed such just notions of that benevolence, that love of social good, that generosity to enemies, that contempt of life, that wisdom, that veneration for noble exploits, that docility and frugality, that devotedness to public use, that distance from false glory, that magnanimity, and all the other virtues, which render antiquity venerable to us? Who ever gave such wise instructions to kings and subjects, magistrates and people, lawyers and merchants, soldiers and statesmen, the world and the church? We know these virtues better than any other people in the world. We are able to carry our glory far beyond Egyptians and Persians, Assyrians and Medes, Lacedemonians, Athenians, and Romans;

mans; if not that sort of glory, which glares and dazzles, at least that, which makes tranquil and happy, and procures a felicity far more agreeable than all the pageantry of heroism and worldly splendor.

Christians, let not these be mere speculations to us. Let us endeavor to reduce them to practice. Never let us suffer our political principles to clash with the principles of our religion. Far from us, and far from us for ever, be the abominable maxims of that pernicious Florentine,\* who gave statesmen such fatal lessons as these: A prince, who would maintain his dignity, ought to learn not to be virtuous, when affairs of state require him to practise vice; he ought to be frugal with his own private fortune, and liberal with public money; he ought never to keep his word to his own disadvantage; he ought not so much to aspire at virtue as at the semblance of it; he ought to be apparently merciful, faithful, sincere and religious, but really the direct opposite; that he cannot possibly practise what are accounted virtues in other men, because necessity of state will often oblige him to act contrary to charity, humanity and religion; he ought to yield to the various changes of fortune, to do right as often as he can, but not to scruple doing wrong when need requires.—I say again, far from us be these abominable maxims! Let us obey the precepts of Jesus Christ, and by so doing let us draw down blessings on this nation more pure and perfect than those which we now enjoy.

The blessings we now enjoy, and which providence bestowed on us so abundantly a few days ago,† should inspire us with lasting gratitude; however, my brethren, they are not, they ought not to be, the full accomplishment of our wishes.

W

Such

\* Machiavel. Princ. xv. xvi. xvii.

† At the battle of Ramilles, May 23, 1706.

Such laurels as we aspire at, are not gathered in fields of battle. The path to that eminence, to which we travel, is not covered with human gore. The acclamations we love, are not excited by wars, and rumors of wars, the clangor of arms, and the shoutings of armed men.

Were our pleasure, though not of the purest sort, perfect in its own kind, we should experience a rise in happiness! But can we enjoy our victories, without mourning for the miseries which procured them! Our triumphs indeed abase and confound our enemies, and make them lick the dust; yet these very triumphs present one dark side to us. Witness the many wounds, which I should make a point of not opening, were it not a relief to mourners to hear of their sufferings; were it not equitable to declare to those, whose sorrows have procured our joy, that we remember them, that we are concerned for them, that we sympathize with them, that we are not so taken up with public joy as to forget private woe. Witness, I say, so many desolate houses among us. Witness this mourning in which so many of us appear to-day. Witness these affectionate Josephs, who lament the death of their parents. Witness these Marys and Marthas, weeping at the tomb of Lazarus. Witness these distressed Davids, who weep as they go, and exclaim, *O Absalom, my son! my son Absalom! would God I had died for thee!* *O Absalom, my son, my son!* 2 Sam. xviii. 33. Witness these Rachels, who make Rama echo with their cries, *refusing to be comforted, because their children are not,* Jer. xxxi. 15.

My dear brethren, on whom the hand of God is heavy, ye sorrowful Naomis, ye melancholy Maras, with whom the Almighty hath dealt very bitterly, Ruth i. 20. we share your griefs, we mix our tears with yours, we feel all the blows that

that strike you. O fatal victory! O bloody glory! you are not fruits of *righteousness*.

Christians, if our joy be mixed, it is because our *righteousness* is mixed. Let us not search for our misfortunes in any other cause. Let us do, when any thing is wanting to complete our joy, what the ancient people of God did, whenever they were conquered: The congregation was assembled, the ephod was put on, the oracle was consulted, inquisition was made from tribe to tribe, from family to family, from house to house, from person to person, who it was, whose sin had caused the loss of the victory, or the loss of a regiment, and when he was discovered he was put to death. Joshua, after he had met with a repulse before Ai, and had lost thirty-six men, rent his garments, and lay on his face upon the earth before the ark of the Lord. In like manner, let us, my brethren, at the remembrance of infected countries, fields of battle covered with carcases, rivers of blood dying the soil, confused heaps of dead and dying fellow-creatures, new globes of fire flying in the air, let us examine ourselves. Happy, if, as in the case just now mentioned, only one criminal could be found among many thousands of innocent persons! Alas! we are obliged, on the contrary, to lament, that there is hardly one innocent among thousands of the guilty.

Where is the Achan, who imbitters the glorious and immortal victories, which God grants to Israel? What tribe, what family, what house, shall be taken? Is it the magistrate? Is it the people? Is it the pastor? Is it the flock? Is it the merchant? Is it the soldier? Ah! my brethren! do you not hear the oracle of the Lord answering from the terrible tribunal erected in your own consciences? It is the magistrate; it is the people; it is the pastor; it is the flock; it is the merchant; it is the soldier.

It.

It is that *magistrate*, who, being required to have always before his eyes that God, by whom kings reign, and that throne, before which the greatest monarchs of the world must be judged, is dazzled with his own grandeur, governed by a worldly policy, and hath more at heart to enforce the observation of his own capricious orders, than those rules of eternal rectitude, which secure the safety and happiness of a nation.

It is that *people*, who, instead of considering the felicity of that nation whose God is the Lord, are attempting to be happy independently of God; choosing rather to sacrifice to blind chance, than to him who is the happy God, and who alone dispenses prosperous and adverse circumstances.

It is that *minister*, who, instead of confining his attention to the discharge of all the duties of his office, performs only such parts as acquire him a popular reputation, neglecting private duties, such as friendly and affectionate remonstrances, paternal advice, private charities, secret visits, which characterize the true ministers of the gospel.

It is that *congregation*, which, instead of regarding the word dispensed by us as the word of God, licentiously turns all public ministrations into ridicule, and under pretence of ingenuity and freedom of thought, encourages infidelity and irreligion; or, at best, imagines that religion consists more in hearing and knowing than in practice and obedience.

It is that *soldier*, who, though he is always at war with death, marching through fire and flames, hearing nothing but the sound of warlike instruments crying to him with a loud and dreadful voice, *remember, you must die!* yet frames a morality of his own, and imagines, that his profession, so proper in itself to inculcate him to obey the maxims of the gospel, serves to free him from all obligation to obedience.

Ah!

Ah! this it is, which obscures our brightest triumphs; this stains our laurels with blood; this excites lamentations, and mixes them with our songs of praise. Let us scatter these dark clouds. Let us purify our righteousness in order to purify our happiness. Let religion be the bridle, the rule, the soul of all our councils; and so may it procure us unalterable peace, and unmixed pleasure! or rather, as there is no such pleasure on earth, as imperfection is a character essential to human affairs, let us elevate our hearts and minds to nobler objects, let us sigh after happier periods, and let each of us seek true glory in the enjoyment of God. God grant us this grace! To him be honor and glory for ever, Amen.

---

## SERMON X.

### CHRISTIAN HEROISM.

PROVERBS xvi. 32.

*He that ruleth his spirit, is better than he that  
taketh a city.*

**W**ERE we to judge of these words by the first impressions they make on the mind, we should place them among such hyperbolical propositions as imagination forms to color and exceed truth. The mind on some occasions is so struck as to magnify the object in contemplation. The more susceptible people are of lively impressions, the more subject they are to declamation and hyperbole. We find these maxims sometimes necessary in explaining the sacred authors. Were we to adhere scrupulously to their words, we should often mistake their meaning, and extend their thoughts beyond due bounds. The people of the east seldom express themselves with precision. A cloud intercepting a few rays of light is *the sun darkened*: A meteor in the air is *the powers of the heavens shaken*: Jonah in the belly of the fish is *a man down at the bottom of the mountains*: Thunder is *the voice of Jehovah, powerful and full of majesty, dividing flames of fire, breaking cedars of Lebanon, making Syrians skip, and stripping forests bare*: A swarm of insects is *a nation set in battle array, marching every one on his ways, not breaking their ranks, besieging a city, having the teeth of a lion, and the cheek teeth of a great lion*, Joel i. 6. and ii. 7/9.

If we be ever authorized to solve a difficult text, by examining the license of hyperbolical style: if ever it be necessary to reduce hyperbole to precision, is it not so now in explaining the

text



text before us? *He that ruleth his spirit, is better than he that taketh a city.* What justness can there be in comparing a man, who by reflection corrects his passions, with an hero, who, in virtue of concerted plans, great fatigues, spending days and nights on horseback, surmounting difficulties, enduring heats and colds, braving a variety of dangers, at last arrives, by marching through a shower of shot darkening the air, to cut through a Squadron, to scale a wall, and to hoist his flag in a conquered city?

But however just this commentary may appear, you will make no use of it here, unless you place christianity in the exercise of easy virtues, and after the example of most men, accommodate religion to your passions instead of reforming your passions by religion. Endeavor to form principles, resist fashion and custom, eradicate prejudice, undertake the conquest of yourself, carry fire and sword into the most sensible part of your soul, enter the lists with your darling sin, *mortify your members which are upon earth*, rise above flesh and blood, nature, and self-love, and, to say all in one word, endeavor to *rule your spirit*; and you will find, that Solomon hath rigorously observed the laws of precision, that he hath spoken the language of logic and not of oratory, and that there is not a shadow of hyperbole or exaggeration in this proposition, *He that ruleth his spirit, is better than he that taketh a city.*

But to what period shall we refer the explication of the text? We will make meditation supply the place of experience, and we will establish a truth, which the greatest part of you have not experienced, and which perhaps you never will experience. This is the design of this discourse. Our subject is true heroism, the real hero.

I enter into the matter. The word *heroism* is borrowed of the heathens. They called those  
men

men heroes, whom a remainder of modesty and religion prevented their putting into the number of their gods, but who for the glory of their exploits were too great to be enrolled among mere men. Let us purify this idea. The man, of whom Solomon speaks, *be who ruleth his spirit*, ought not to be confounded with the rest of mankind; he is a man transformed by grace, one, who, to use the language of scripture, is a *partaker of the divine nature*. We are going to speak of this man, and we will first describe him, and next set forth his magnanimity, or, to keep to the text, we will first explain what it is *to rule the spirit*, and, secondly, we will prove, that *he, that ruleth his spirit, is better than he, that taketh a city*. If we proceed further, it will only be to add a few reflections tending to convince you, that you are all called to heroism; that there is no middle way in religion; that you must of necessity, either bear the shame and infamy of being mean and dastardly souls, or be crowned with the glory of heroes.

1. Let us first explain the words of the text, *to rule the spirit*. Few words are more equivocal in the sacred language than this which our interpreters have rendered *spirit*. It is put in different places for the thoughts of the *mind*, the passions of the *heart*, the emotions of *sense*, phantoms of *imagination*, and illusions of *concupiscence*. We will not trouble you with grammatical dissertations. In our idiom, *to rule the spirit*, (and this is precisely the idea of Solomon) *to rule the spirit* is never to suffer oneself to be prejudiced by false ideas, always to see things in their true point of view, to regulate our hatred and our love, our desires and our inactivity, exactly according to the knowledge we have obtained after mature deliberation, that objects are worthy of our esteem, or deserve our aversion, that they are worth obtaining, or proper to be neglected. But,

But, as this manner of speaking, to rule the spirit, supposes exercise, pains, labors, and resistance, we ought not to confine ourselves to the general idea which we have given. We consider man in three points of light; in regard to his natural dispositions; in regard to the objects that surround him; and in regard to the habits which he hath contracted.

I. Consider the *natural dispositions* of man. Man, as soon as he is in the world, finds himself the slave of his heart, instead of being master of it. I mean, that instead of a natural facility to admit only what is true, and to love only what is amiable, he feels, I know not what, interior power, which disposes him to truth and virtue, and conciliates him to vice and falsehood.

I am not going to agitate the famous question of free-will, nor to enter the lists with those, who are noted in the church for the heresy of denying the doctrine of human depravity; nor will I repeat all the arguments, good and bad, which are alledged against it. If there be a subject, in which we ought to have no implicit faith, either in those who deny, or in those who affirm; if there be a subject, in the discussion of which, they who embrace the side of error advance truth, and they who embrace the side of truth advance falsehoods, this is certainly the subject. But we will not litigate this doctrine. We will alledge here only one proof of our natural depravity, that shall be taken from experience, and, for evidence of this fatal truth, we refer each of you to his own feelings.

Is virtue to be practised? Who does not feel, as soon as he is capable of observing, an inward power of resistance? By virtue, here I understand, an universal disposition of an intelligent soul to devote itself to order, and to regulate its conduct as order requires. Order demands, that, when

when I suffer, I should submit myself to the mighty hand of God, which afflicts me. When I am in prosperity, order requires me to acknowledge the bounty of my benefactor. If I possess talents superior to those of my neighbor, order requires me to use them for the glory of him from whom I received them. If I am obliged to acknowledge, that my neighbor hath a richer endowment than I, order requires me to acquiesce with submission, and to acknowledge with humility this difference of endowment; should I revolt with insolence, or dispute through jealousy or self-love, I should act disorderly.

What I affirm of virtue, that it is a general disposition, that I affirm also in regard to an indisposition to sin. To avoid vice is to desist alike from every thing contrary to order, from slander and anger, from indolence and voluptuousness, and so on.

He, who forms such ideas of the obligations of men, will have too many reasons to acknowledge, by his own inward feelings and experience, that we bring into the world with us propensities hostile and fatal to such obligations. Some of these are in the body; others in the mind.

Some are in the *body*. Who is there, that finds in his senses, that suppleness and readiness of compliance with a volition, which is itself directed by law of order? Who does not feel his constitution rebel against virtue? I am not speaking now of such men as brutally give themselves up to their senses, who consult no other laws than the revolutions of their own minds, and who, having abandoned for many years the government of their souls to the humors of their bodies, have lost all dominion over their senses. I speak of such as have the most sincere desire to hear and obey the laws of order. How often does a tender and charitable soul find in a body, subject to violence and anger, obstacles against

the exercise of its charity and tenderness? How often does a soul, penetrated with respect for the laws of purity, find in a body, rebellious against this virtue, terrible obstacles, to which it is in a manner constrained to yield?

Disorder is not only in the body; the *soul* is in the same condition. Consult yourselves in regard to such virtues, and vices as are, so to speak, altogether spiritual, and have no relation, or a very distant one, to matter, and you will find you brought into the world an indisposition to some of these virtues, and an inclination to the opposite vices. For example, avarice is one of these spiritual vices, having only a very distant relation to matter. I do not mean, that avarice does not incline us toward sensible objects, I only say, that it is passion less seated in the material than in the spiritual part of man; it rises rather out of reflections of the mind than out of motions of the body. Yet how many people are born fond; people always inclined to amass money, and to whom the bare thought of giving, or parting with any thing, gives pain; people who prove, by the very manner in which they exercise the laws of generosity, that they are naturally inclined to violate them; people who never give except by constraint, who tear away, as it were, what they bestow on the necessities of the poor; and who never cut off those dear parts of themselves without taking the most affectionate leave of them? Envy and jealousy are dispositions of the kind, which we call spiritual. They have their seat in the soul. There are many persons, who acknowledge the injustice and baseness of these vices, and who hate them, and who nevertheless are not sufficient masters of themselves to prevent the dominion of them, at least to prevent a repetition of them, and not to find sometimes their own misery in the prosperity of other persons.

As we feel in our constitution obstacles to virtue, and propensities to vice, so we perceive also inclinations to error, and obstacles to truth. These things are closely connected; for if we find within us natural obstacles to virtue, we find, for that very reason, natural obstacles to truth; and if we be born with propensities to vice, we are born on that very account prone to error. Strictly speaking, all ideas of vice may be referred to one, that is to error. Every vice, every irregular passion openly or tacitly implies a falsehood. Every vice, every irregular passion includes this error, that a man, who gratifies his passion, is happier than he, who restrains and moderates it. Now, every man judging in this manner, whether he do so openly or covertly, takes the side of error. If we be then naturally inclined to some vices, we are naturally inclined to some errors, I mean, to admit that false principle, on which the irregular passion establisheth the vice it would commit, the desire of gratification. An impassionate man is not free to discern truth from falsehood; at least, he cannot without extreme constraint discern the one from the other. He is inclined to fix his mind on whatever favors his passion, changes its nature, and disguises vice in the habit of virtue; and, to say all in one word, he is impelled to fix his mind on whatever makes truth appear false, and falsehood true.

I conclude, the disposition of mind, of which Solomon speaks, and which he describes by *ruling the spirit*, supposes labor, constraint, and exercise. A man, who would acquire this noble disposition of mind, a man, who would *rule his spirit*, must, in some sort, re-create himself; he finds himself at once, if I may be allowed to say so, at war with nature; his body must be formed anew; his humors and his spirits must be turned into another channel; violence must be done to all the powers of his soul.

2. Having considered man in regard to his natural dispositions, observe him, secondly, in regard to *surrounding objects*. Here you will obtain a second exposition of Solomon's words, *He, that ruleth his spirit*; you will have a second class of evidences of that exercise, labor, and constraint, which true heroism supposes. Society is composed of many enemies, who seem to be taking pains to increase those difficulties, which our natural dispositions oppose against truth and virtue.

Examine the members of this society among whom we are appointed to live, consult their ideas, hear their conversation, weigh their reasonings, and you will find almost every where, false judgments, errors, mistakes, and prejudices: prejudices of birth, taken from our parents, the nurses who suckled us, the people who made the habits, in which we were wrapped in our cradles: prejudices of education, taken from the masters, to whom the care of our earliest days was committed, from some false ideas, which they had imbibed in their youth, and from other illusions which they had created themselves: prejudices of country, taken from the genius of the people among whom we have lived, and, so to speak, from the very air we have breathed: prejudices of religion, taken from our catechists, from the divines we have consulted, from the pastors by whom we have been directed, from the sect we have embraced: prejudices of friendship, taken from the connections we have had, and the company we have kept: prejudices of trade and profession, taken from the mechanical arts we have followed, or the abstract sciences we have studied: prejudices of fortune, taken from the condition of life in which we have been, either among the noble or the poor. This is only a small part of the canals, by which error is conveyed to us. What efforts must a man make, what pains

must he take with himself, to preserve himself from contagion, to hold his soul perpetually in equilibrium, to keep all the gates of error shut, and incessantly to maintain, amidst so many prejudices, that freedom of judgment, which weighs argument against objection, objection against argument, which deliberately examines all that can be advanced in favor of a proposition, and all that can be said against it, which considers an object in every point of view, and which makes us determine only as we are constrained by the irresistible authority, and by the soft violence of truth, demonstration, and evidence?

As the men, who surround us, fascinate us by their errors, so they decoy us into vice by their example. In all places, and in all ages, virtue had fewer partizans than vice; in all ages and in all places, the friends of virtue were so few in comparison of the partizans of vice, that the saints complained, that the earth was not inhabited by men of the first kind, and that the whole world was occupied by the latter, "the godly man ceaseth; the faithful fail from among the children of men. The Lord looked down from heaven upon the children of men; to see if there were any that did understand; and seek God. They are all gone aside, they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no not one," Psal. xiii. 1. and xiv. 2, 3. An exaggeration of the prophet; I grant, but an exaggeration for which the universality of human depravity hath given too much occasion. Cast your eyes attentively on society, you will be, as our prophet was, astonished at the great number of the partizans of vice; you will be troubled, as he was, to distinguish in the crowd any friends of virtue; and you will find yourself inclined to say, as he said, *there is none that doeth good, no not one.*

But



But how difficult is it to resist example, and *to rule the spirit* among such a number of tyrants, who aim only to enslave it! In order to resist example, we must incessantly oppose those natural inclinations, which urge us to imitation. To resist example, we must not suffer ourselves to be dazzled either with the number, or the splendor of such as have placed vice on a throne. To resist example, we must brave persecution, and all the inconveniences, to which worldly people never fail to expose them, who refuse to follow them down the precipice. To resist example, we must love virtue for virtue's sake. To resist example, we must transport ourselves into another world, imagine ourselves among those holy societies, who surround the throne of a holy God, who make his excellencies the continual matter of their adoration and homage, and who fly at the first signal of his hand, the first breath of his mouth. What a work, what a difficult work for you, poor mortal, whose eyes are always turned toward the earth, and whom your own involuntary and insurmountable weight incessantly carries downward!

3. Finally, we must acknowledge what labor, pains and resistance, the disposition, of which Solomon speaks, requires, if we consider man in regard to the *habits* which he hath contracted. As soon as we enter into the world, we find ourselves impelled by our natural propensities, stunned with the din of our passions, and, as I just now said, seduced by the errors, and carried away by the examples, of our companions. Seldom in the first years of life, do we surmount that natural bias, and that power of example, which impel us to false hood and sin. Most men have done more acts of vice than of virtue, consequently, in the course of a certain number of years, we contribute by our way of living to join to the depravity of nature that which comes from exercise and habit.

bit. A man, who would rule his spirit, is then required to eradicate the habits which have taken possession of him. What a task!

What a task, which we endeavor to prevent the return of ideas, which for many years our minds have revolved? What a task, to defend one's self from a passion which knows all the avenues of the mind, and how to facilitate access by means of the body? What a task, to turn away from the flattering images, and seducing solicitations of concupiscence long accustomed to gratification? What a task, when we are obliged to make the greatest efforts in the weakest part of life, and to subdue an enemy, whom we have been always used to consider as unconquerable, and whom we never durst attack, when he had no other arms than what we chose to give him, and enjoyed no other advantages than such as we thought proper to allow! Such labor, such pains and constraint, must he experience, who acquires the art of ruling his spirit? Now then, as we have explained this disposition of mind, let us assign the place which is due to him who hath it. Having given an idea of real heroism, we must display the grandeur of it, and prove the proposition in my text, *He that ruleth his spirit, is better than he that taketh a city.*

II. For this purpose, it is not necessary to observe, that, by *him that taketh a city*, Solomon does not mean a man, who from principles of virtue, to defend his country and religion, hazards his life and liberty in a just war: in this view, *he that taketh a city*, and *he that ruleth his spirit*, is one and the same man. Solomon intends conquerors, who live, if I may express myself so, upon victories and conquests; he intends heroes, such as the world considers them.

Neither is it necessary precisely to fix the bounds of this general expression; *is better. He that ruleth his spirit, is better than he that taketh a city.*

city. The sense is easily understood: in general, it signifies, that *he that ruleth his spirit*, discovers more fortitude, more magnanimity, and more courage, that he hath more just ideas of glory, and is more worthy of esteem and praise, than they who are called in the world conquerors and heroes.

We will prove this proposition by comparing the hero of the world with the christian hero; and we will confine the comparison to four articles: First, the motives which animate them: secondly, the exploits they perform: thirdly, the enemies they attack: and lastly, the rewards they obtain. *He that taketh a city*, is animated with motives mean and worldly, which degrade an intelligent soul, even while they seem to elevate it to a pinnacle of grandeur and glory: but *he that ruleth his spirit*, is animated by motives grand, noble and sublime, every way suited to the excellence of our nature. *He that ruleth his spirit*, is capable of all the exploits of *him that taketh a city*: but *he that taketh a city*, is not capable of the exploits of *him that ruleth his spirit*. *He that taketh a city*, attacks an exterior enemy, to whom he hath no attachment: but *he that ruleth his spirit*, attacks an enemy who is dear to him, and hath the greatness of soul to turn his arms against himself. In fine, *he that taketh a city*, is crowned only by idiots, who have no just notions of grandeur and heroism: but *he that ruleth his spirit*, will be crowned with the hands of the only just appraiser, and dispenser of glory. These are four titles of superiority, which the christian hero hath over the false hero: four sources of proofs to establish the proposition in our text, *He that ruleth his spirit, is better than he that taketh a city*.

1. Let us consider the motives, which animate a conqueror *that taketh a city*, and the motives which animate a man that obtains *rule over his spirit*:

*spirit*: the motives of the true hero, with the motives of the false hero. What are the motives of a false hero? What spirit animates him, when he undertakes to conquer a city? This is one of the questions which sinful passions have most obscured. Truth is disguised in epistles dedicatory, and in profane eulogiums, yea sometimes in religious discourses. The majesty of a victorious general, the glory of a conqueror, the pompous titles of victor, arbiter of peace, arbiter of war, have so dazzled us, and in some sort so perverted the powers of our soul, that we cannot form just notions of this subject. Hear pure nature, formerly speaking by the mouth of a nation, who were the more wise for not being civilized by the injustice of our laws and customs. I speak of the ancient Scythians. The most famous raker of cities came to their cabins and caverns. He had already subdued his fellow citizens and neighbors. Already Thebes and Athens, Thrace and Thessaly, had submitted to his arms. Already, Greece being too small a sphere of action for him, he had penetrated even into Persia, passed the famous Phrygian river, where he slew six hundred thousand men, reduced Caria and Judæa, made war with Darius and conquered him; performed exploits more than human, and in spite of nature, besieged and took Tyre, the most famous siege recorded in ancient history, subdued the Mardi and Bactrians, attained the mountains Caucasus and Oxus, and, in a word, conquered more countries, and enslaved more people, than we can describe, or even mention within the limits allotted to this exercise. This man arrives in Scythia. The Scythians sent deputies to him, who thus addressed him. "Had the gods given you a body proportioned to your ambition, the whole universe would have been too little for you: with one hand you will have touched the east, and with the other the west,

well, and, not content with this, you would have followed the son, and have seen where he hides himself. Whatever you are, you are aspiring at what you can never obtain. From Europe you run into Asia: and from Asia back you run again into Europe, and having enslaved all mankind, you attack rivers, and forests, and wild-beasts. What have you to do with us? We have never set foot in your country. May not a people, living in a desert, be allowed to be ignorant of who you are, and whence you come? You boast of having exterminated robbers, and you yourself are the greatest robber in the world. You have pillaged and plundered all nations, and now you come to rob us of our cattle. It is in vain to fill your hands, for you are always in search of fresh prey. Of what use are your boundless riches, except to irritate your eternal thirst? You are the first man, who ever experienced such extreme want in the midst of such abundance. All you have, serves only to make you desire with more fury what you have not. If you be a God, do good to mankind: but if you be only an insignificant mortal, think of what you are, and remember, that it is a great folly to occupy things, which make us forget ourselves.<sup>119</sup> These are the motives, which animate the heroes of the world; these are the sentiments, which are disguised under the fine names of glory, valor, greatness of soul, heroism. An insatiable avidity of riches, an invincible pride, a boundless ambition, a total forgetfulness of what is, what ought to be, and what must be hereafter.

The motives of him, who endeavors to render himself master of his own heart, are love of order, desire of freedom from the slavery of the passions, a noble firmness of soul, which admits only

<sup>119</sup> Quintus Curtius, lib. vii. chap. 8.

only what appears true, and loves only what appears lovely, after sober and serious discussion. In this first view, then, the advantage is wholly in favor of *him, that ruleth his spirit, is better than he, that taketh a city.*

2. Compare, in the second place, the exploits of *him that ruleth his spirit*, with the exploits of *him, that taketh a city.* He, who is capable of ruling his spirit, is capable of all that is great and noble in *him, that taketh a city*: but *he, that taketh a city*, is not capable of all that is great and magnanimous in *him, that ruleth his spirit.* I will explain myself.

What is there great and magnanimous in a hero that taketh a city? Patience to endure fatigue, to surmount difficulties, to suffer contradiction: intrepidity in the most frightful dangers: presence of mind in the most violent and painful exercises: unshaken firmness in sight of a near and terrible dissolution. These are dispositions of mind, I grant, which seem to elevate man above humanity:—but a christian hero is capable of all this, I speak sincerely, and without a figure. A man, who hath obtained a religious freedom of mind; who always preserves this liberty; who always weighs good and evil, who believes only what is true, and does only what is right; who hath always his eye upon his duty, or, as the psalmist expresseth it, who sets the Lord always before him; such a man is capable, literally capable, of all you admire in a worldly hero. No difficulty discourages him, no contradiction disconcerts him, no fatigue stops him, no dangers affright him, no pain that he can bear, no appearance of death shocks him into paleness, and fear, and flight. Our women and children, our confessors and martyrs, have literally performed greater exploits of fortitude, patience, courage, and constancy, in convents, prisons, and dungeons, at stakes, and on scaffolds, than Alexander

anders and Cæsar in all their lives. And where is the hero of this world, who hath performed so many actions of courage and magnanimity in sieges and battles, as our confessors have for thirty years on board the galleys? The former were supported by the presence of thousands of witnesses; the latter had no spectators but God, and their own consciences. The christian hero is capable then of all that is great in the hero of the world. But the worldly hero is incapable of performing such exploits as the christian hero performs; and he knows perfectly, that his heroism doth not conduct him so far in the path of glory. Try the strength of a worldly hero. Set him to contend with a passion. You will soon find this man, invincible before, subdued into slavery and shame. He, who was firm and fearless in sight of fire and flame, at the sound of warlike instruments, becomes feeble, mean, and dejected, by a seducing and enchanting object. Sampson defeats the Philistines: but Dalilah subdues Sampson. Sampson carries away the gates of Gaza: but Sampson sinks under the weight of his own sensuality. Hercules seeks highway robbers to combat, and monsters to subdue: but he cannot resist impurity. We find him on monuments of antiquity carrying an infant on his shoulders, an emblem of voluptuousness, stooping under that unworthy burden, and letting his club fall from his hand. There is, therefore, no declamation, no hyperbole in our proposition: the christian hero is capable of performing all the great actions performed by the hero of the world: but the hero of the world is incapable of performing such noble actions as the christian hero performs; and in this respect, *he, that ruleth his spirit, is better than he, that taketh a city.*

3. Compare him, that *ruleth a city*, with him that *ruleth his spirit*, in regard to the enemies, whom they attack, and you will find in the latter

letter a third title of superiority over the former. He, that taketh his city, attacketh an exterior enemy, who is a stranger, and often odious to him. The ambition, that fills his soul, leaves no room for compassion and pity; and, provided he can but obtain his end, no matter to him, though the way be strewd with the dying and the dead, to obtain that; he travels over mountains of heads, and arms, and carcases. The tumultuous passions, which tyrannize over him, stifle the voice of nature, and deafen him to the cries of a thousand miserable wretches sacrificed to his fame.

This enemy, whom the christian combats, is his own heart; for he is required to turn his arms against himself. He must suspend all sentiments of self-love; he must become his own executioner, and, to use the ideas and expressions of Jesus Christ, he must actually deny himself.

Jesus Christ well knew mankind. He did not preach like some preaching novices, who in order to incline their hearers to subdue their passions, propose the work to them as free from difficulty. Jesus Christ did not disguise the difficulties, which the man must undergo, who puts on the spirit of christianity; and I do not know whether we meet with any expressions in the writings of pagan poets or philosophers, more natural, and at the same time more emphatical than this: *If any man will come after me, let him deny himself*, Matt. xvi. 24.

Not that this is literally practicable, nor that man can put off himself, nor that religion requires us to sacrifice to it what makes the essence and happiness of our nature; on the contrary, strictly speaking, it is sin, which makes us put off or deny what is great and noble in our essence; it is sin, which requires us to sacrifice our true happiness to it. If Jesus Christ expresses himself in this manner, it is because, when

man



man is possessed with a passion, it is incorporated, as it were, with himself; it seems to him essential to his felicity; every thing troubles, and every thing puts him on the rack, when he cannot gratify it; without gratifying his passion, his food hath no taste, flowers no smell, pleasures no point, the sun is dark, society disagreeable, life itself hath no charms. To attack a reigning passion is to deny self; and here is the patience of the saints; this is the enemy, whom the christian attacks; this is the war, which he wagem. How tremulous and weak is the hand, when it toucheth a sword to be plunged into one's own bosom! Love of order, truth, and virtue, support a christian hero in this almost desperate undertaking.

4. In fine, compare him, that ruleth his spirits, with him that taketh a city, in regard to the acclamations with which they are accompanied, and the crowns prepared for them. Who are the authors of those acclamations, with which the air resounds the praise of worldly heroes? They are courtiers, poets, panegyrists. But what! are people of this order the only persons, who entertain just notions of glory; and, if they be, are they generous enough to speak out? How can a soul wholly devoted to the will and caprice of a conqueror; how can a venal creature, who makes a market of eulogiums and praises, which he sells to the highest bidder; how can a brutal soldiery determine what is worthy of praise or blame? Is it for such people to distribute prizes of glory, and to assign heroes their rank? To be exalted by people of this sort is a shame; to be crowned by their hands an infamy.

Elevate, elevate thy meditation, christian soul, rise into the Majesty of the Great Supreme. Think of that sublime Intelligence, who unites in his essence every thing noble and sublime. Contemplate God, surrounded with angels and archangels,

archangels, cherubims and seraphims. Hear the concerts, which happy spirits perform to his glory. Hear them penetrated, ravished, charmed with the divine beauties, crying night and day, "Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of Hosts; the whole earth is full of his glory. Blessing and glory, wisdom, and thanksgiving, honor and power and might be unto our God for ever and ever. Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints. Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name?" This being, so perfect, this being, so worthily praised, this being, so worthy of everlasting praise, this is he, who will pronounce upon true glory; this is he, who will compose the eulogium of all who aspire at it; this is he, who will one day praise in the face of heaven and earth, all those, who shall have made the noble conquests, which we have been describing.

Imagination links under the weight of this subject, and this object is too bright for eyes like ours: but the nature of things doth not depend on our faculty of seeing them. As God calls us to combats more than human, so he sees fit to support us by a prospect of more than human rewards. Yes, it is the Supreme Being, it is he, who will one day distribute the praises, which are due to such as have triumphed over themselves. What a spectacle! what a prospect! Yes, christian champion, after thou hast resisted flesh and blood, after thou hast been treated as a fool by mankind, after thou hast run the race of tribulation, after thou hast made thy life one perpetual martyrdom, thou shalt be called forth in the presence of men and angels; the master of the world shall separate thee from the crowd; there he will address to thee this language, *Well done, good and faithful servant*; there he will accomplish the promise, which he

this day makes to all who fight under his standard, *be that overcometh shall sit down in my throne.* Ah! glory of worldly heroes; profane encomiums; fastidious inscriptions; proud trophies; brilliant but corruptible diadems; what are you in comparison with the acclamations which await the christian hero, and the crowns which God, the rewarder, prepares for him.

And you, mean and timid souls, who perhaps admire these triumphs, but who have not the ambition to strive to obtain them; you soft and indolent spirits, who, without reluctance, give up all pretensions to the immortal crown, which God prepares for heroism, provided he require no account of your indolence and effeminacy, and suffer you, like brute beasts, to follow the first instincts of your nature; undeceive yourselves. I said at the beginning, you are all called to heroism; there is no midway in religion; you must be covered with shame and infamy along with the base and timid, or crowned with glory in company with heroes. The duty of an intelligent soul is to adhere to truth, and to follow virtue; we bring into the world with us obstacles to both; our duty is to surmount them; without this we betray our trust; we do not answer the end of our creation; we are guilty, and we shall be punished for not endeavoring to obtain the great end for which we are created.

Let this be the great principle of our divinity and morality. Let us invariably retain it. Let us not lose ourselves in discussions and researches into the origin of evil, and into the permission of the entrance of sin into the world. Let us not bury ourselves alive in speculations and labyrinths; let us not plunge into abyfles, from which no pains can disengage us. Let us fear an ocean full of rocks, and let an idea of the shipwrecks, which so many rash people have made, stop us on the shore. Let us consider these ques-

tions less with a view to discover the perfections of the Creator in the thick darkness, under which he hath thought proper to conceal them, than in that of learning the obligations of a creature. I do not mean to decry those great geniuses, who have treated of this profound subject. Their works do honor to the human mind. They are eternal monuments to the glory of a reason, which knows how to collect its force, and to fix itself on a single object; but, it is always certain, that we cannot arrive at clear truth on this subject, except by means of thousands of distinctions and abstractions, which most of us cannot make. This subject is so delicate and refined, that most eyes are incapable of seeing it, and it is placed on an eminence so steep and inaccessible, that few geniuses can attain it.

Let us religiously abide by our principle. The duty of an intelligent soul is to adhere to truth, and to practise virtue: We are born with a disinclination to both. Our duty is to get rid of this; and without doing so we neglect the obligation of an intelligent soul, we do not answer the end, for which we were intended, we are guilty, and we shall be punished for not having answered the end of our creation.

Let us consider ourselves as soldiers placed round a besieged city, and having such or such an enemy to fight, such or such a post to force. You, you are naturally subject to violence and anger. It is sad to find in one's own constitution an opposition to virtues so lovely as those of submission, charity, sweetness, and patience. Groan under this evil: but do not despair; when you are judged, less attention will be paid to your natural indisposition to these virtues than to the efforts, which you made to get rid of it. To this point direct all your attention, and your strength, and all your courage. Say to yourself, this is the post, which my general intends I should

Should force ; this is the enemy I am to fight with. And be you fully convinced, that one of the principal views, which God hath in preserving your life, is, that you should render yourself master of this passion. You, you are naturally disposed to be proud. The moment you leave your mind to its natural bias, it turns to such objects as seem the most fit to give you high ideas of yourself; to your penetration, your memory, your imagination, and even to exterior advantages, which vanity generally incorporates with the person who enjoys them. It is melancholy to find within yourself any seeds of an inclination, which so ill agree with creatures vile and miserable as men. Lament this misfortune ; but do not despair ; to this side turn all your attention and all your courage and strength. Say to yourself, this is the post, which my general would have me force ; this is the enemy, whom he hath appointed me to oppose. And be fully convinced, that one of the principal views of God, in continuing you in this world, is, that you may resist this passion, and make yourself master of it.

Let us, all together, my brethren, endeavor to rule our own spirits. Let us not be dismayed at the greatness of the work, because *greater is he that is in us, than he that is in the world.* Grace comes to the aid of nature. Prayer acquires strength by exercise. The passions, after having been tyrants, become slaves in their turn. The danger and pain of battle vanish, when the eye gets sight of conquest. How inconceivably beautiful is victory then ! God grant we may obtain it ! To him be honor and glory for ever, Amen.

---

## SERMON XI.

---

### GENERAL MISTAKES:

ROMANS xii. 2.

*Be not conformed to this world.*

OF all the discourses delivered in this pulpit, those, which deserve the greatest deference, and usually obtain the least, are such as treat of general mistakes. What subjects require greater deference? Our design in treating of them is to dissipate those illusions, with which the whole world is familiar, which are authorized by the multitude, and which, like epidemical diseases, inflicted sometimes by providence on public bodies, involve the state, the church, and individuals. Yet, are any discourses less respected than such as these? To attack general mistakes, is, to excite the displeasure of all who favor them, to disgust a whole auditory, and to acquire the most odious of all titles, I mean that of public censor. A preacher is then obliged to choose, either never to attack such mistakes as the multitude think fit to authorize, or to renounce the advantages, which he may promise himself, if he adapt his subjects to the taste of his auditors, and touch their disorders only so far as to accommodate their crimes to their consciences.

Let us not hesitate what part to take. St. Paul determines us by his example. I am going to-day, in imitation of this apostle, to guard you against the rocks, where the many are shipwrecked; He exhorts us, in the words of the text, not to take *the world* for a model; *the world*, that is, the crowd, the multitude, society at large. But what society hath he in view? Is it that of ancient Rome, which he describes as extremely

ly

ly depraved in the beginning of this epistle? Does he say nothing of our world, our cities and provinces? We are going to examine this, and I fear I shall be able to prove to you, that our multitude is a dangerous guide to shew us the way to heaven; and, to confine ourselves to a few articles, I shall prove that they are bad guides to direct us, first, in regard to faith; secondly, in regard to the worship which God requires of us; thirdly, in regard to morality; and lastly, in regard to the hour of death. In these four views I shall enforce the words of my text, *Be not conformed to this world.* This is the whole plan of this discourse.

I. The multitude is a bad guide to direct our faith. We will not introduce here the famous controversy on this question, whether a great number form a presumption in favor of any religion, or whether universality be a certain evidence of the true christian church? How often has this question been debated and determined! How often have we proved against one community, which displays the number of its professors with so much parade, that, if the pretence were well founded, it would operate in favor of paganism, for pagans were always more numerous than christians! How often have we told them, that in divers periods of the ancient church, idolatry and idolaters have been enthroned in both the kingdoms of Judah and Israel! How often have we alledged, that in the time of Jesus Christ, the church was described as a *little flock*, Luke xii. 32. that heathens and Jews were all in league against christianity at first, and that the gospel had only a small number of disciples! How often have we retorted, that for whole centuries, there was no trace, no shadow, of the opinions of modern Rome! But we will not apply ourselves to this controversy to-day, by fixing your attention on the sophisms of foreigners,

Y 2. perhaps

perhaps we might divert your eyes from your own; by shewing you our triumphs over the vain attacks made on us by the enemies of the reformation, perhaps we might turn away your attention from other more dangerous wounds, which the reformed themselves aim at the heart of religion. When I say the multitude is a bad guide in matters of faith, I mean, that the manner, in which most men adhere to truth, is not by principles, which ought to attach them to it, but by a spirit of negligence and prejudice.

It is no small work to examine the truth, when we arrive at an age capable of discussion. The fundamental points of religion, I grant, lie in the scriptures clear and perspicuous, and within the comprehension of all who chuse to attend to them: but when we pass from infancy to manhood, and arrive at an age in which reason seems mature, we find ourselves covered with a veil, which either hides objects from us, or disfigures them. The public discourses we have heard in favor of the sect, in which we were educated, the inveterate hatred we have for all others, who hold principles opposite to ours, the frightful portraits that are drawn before our eyes, of the perils we must encounter, if we depart from the way we have been brought up in, the impressions made upon us by the examples and decisions of our parents, and masters, and teachers, the bad taste of those, who had the care of our education, and who prevented our acquiring that most noble disposition, without which it is impossible even to be a true philosopher, or a real christian, I mean, that of suspending our judgment on subjects not sufficiently proved: from all this arise clouds, that render the truth inaccessible, and which the world cannot dissipate. We do not say, that natural talents or supernatural assistance are wanting; we are fully convinced that God will never give up to final error,  
any



any man who does all in his power to understand the truth. But the world are incapable of this work. Why? Because all the world, except a few, hate labor and meditation in regard to the subjects, which respect another life: because all the world would choose rather to attach themselves to what regards their temporal interests, than to the great interest of eternal happiness: because all the world like better to suppose the principles imbibed in their childhood true, than to impose on themselves the task of weighing them anew in the balance of a sound and severe reason: because all the world have an invincible aversion to suppose, that when they are arrived at manhood, they have almost lost their time in some respects, and that when they leave school they begin to be capable of instruction.

If the nature of the thing cannot convince you, that the multitude continue through negligence in the profession of that religion, in which they were born, experience may here supply the place of reasoning. There is an infinite variety of geniuses among mankind. Propose to an assembly a question, that no system hath yet decided, and you will find, as it is usually said, as many opinions as heads.

It is certain, if mankind were attached to a religion only because they had studied it, we should find a great number of people forsake that, in which they had been brought up, for it is impossible, that a whole society should unite in one point of error, or rather, it is clear to a demonstration, that as truth hath certain characters superior to falsehood, the temples of idols would be instantly deserted, erroneous sects would be soon abandoned, the religion of Jesus Christ, the only one worthy of being embraced, the only one that deserves disciples, would be the only one embraced, and would alone be received by all sincere disciples of truth.

Do not think, my brethren, that this reflection concerning that spirit of negligence, which retains most men in a profession of their own religion, regards only such communions as lay down their own infallibility for a fundamental article of faith, and which prescribe ignorance and blind submission as a first principle to their partizans, for it is but too easy to prove, that the same spirit of negligence reigns in all communities. Hence it comes to pass, that in general so few christians can render a reason for their faith. Hence it is that people are usually better furnished with arguments to oppose such societies as surround them, than with those, which establish the fundamental truths of christianity. If then you follow the direction of the multitude in the study of religion, you will be conducted by a spirit of negligence, prejudice will be held for proof, education for argument, and the decisions of your parents and teachers for infallible oracles of truth.

II. The multitude is a bad guide in regard to that *worship*, which God requireth of us, they defile it with a spirit of superstition. Superstition is a disposition of mind, that inclines us to regulate all parts of divine worship, not by just notions of the Supreme Being, nor by his relations to us, nor by what he has condescended to reveal, but by our own fancies. A superstitious man entertains fantastical ideas of God, and renders to him capricious worship; he not unfrequently takes himself for a model of God; he thinks, that what most resembles himself, however mean and contemptible, approaches nearest to perfection. We affirm, this disposition is almost universal.

It would be needless to prove this to you, my brethren, in regard to erroneous communities. Were superstition banished from the world, we should not see men, who are made in the image  
of

of God, disgrace their nature by prostrating themselves before idols, and marmosets, so as to render religious honors to half a block of wood or stone, the other half of which they apply to the meanest purposes: we should not see a crowd of idolaters performing a ceremonial, in which conviction of mind hath no part, and which is all external and material: we should not see a concourse of people receiving with respect, as the precious blood of the Saviour of the world; a few drops of putrified water, which the warmth of the sun hath produced by fermentation in the trunk of a decayed tree: we should not see pilgrims in procession mangling their flesh in the streets, dragging along heavy loads, howling in the highways, and taking such absurd practices for that repentance, which breaks the heart, and transforms and renews the life. You will easily grant all this, for, I have observed, it is often less difficult to inspire you with horror for these practices, than to excite compassion in you for such as perform them.

But you ought to be informed, that there are other superstitions less gross, and therefore more dangerous. Among us we do not put a worship absolutely foreign to the purpose in the place of that, which God hath commanded and exemplified to us; but we make an estimate of the several parts of true worship. These estimates are regulated by opinions formed through prejudice or passion. What best agrees with our inclinations we consider as the essence of religion, and what would thwart and condemn them we think circumstantial.

We make a scruple of not attending a sermon, not keeping a festival, not receiving the Lord's supper; but we make none of neglecting to visit a prisoner, to comfort the sick, or to plead for the oppressed. We observe a strict decency in our religious assemblies, while our ministers address  
prayer

prayer to God, but we take no pains to accompany him with our minds and hearts, to unite our ejaculations with his, to besiege the throne of grace. We think it a duty to join our voices with those of a whole congregation, and to fill our places of worship with the praises of our Creator; but we do not think ourselves obliged to understand the sense of the psalm, that is sung with so much fervor, and, in the language of an apostle, to *sing with understanding*, 1. Cor. xiv. 15. We lay aside innocent occupations the day before we receive the Lord's supper, but no sooner do we return from that ordinance, than we allow the most criminal pleasures, and enter upon the most scandalous intrigues. Who make these mistakes, my brethren? Is it the few? *Be not conformed to this world*, in regard to the worship that God requires of you; the multitude perform it in a spirit of superstition.

III. Neither are the many a better guide in regard to *morality*. Here, my brethren, we are going more particularly to describe that class of mankind, among which we live, and of which we ourselves are a part. Indeed, the portraits we are going to draw will not be flattering to them, for justice requires, that we should describe men as they are, not as they pretend to be. In order to exactness, let us consider them separately and apart. First, in regard to the masters who govern them. Secondly, in regard to the professions, which they exercise. Thirdly, in regard to some maxims generally received. Fourthly, in regard to the splendid actions, which they celebrate. And lastly, in regard to certain decisive occasions, that like touchstones, discover their principles and motives.

1. Consider mankind in regard to the *masters* who govern them. Here I congratulate myself on the happiness of speaking to a free people, among whom it is not reputed a crime to praise  
what:

what is praise-worthy, and to blame what deserves blame, and where we may freely trace the characters of some men, of whom prudence requires us not to "speak evil, no not in thought, no not in the bed chamber, lest a bird of the air should carry the voice, and that which hath wings should tell the matter," Eccles. x. 20. Is it in the palaces of the great that humility reigns, humility which so well becomes creatures, who, though crowned and enthroned, are yet infirm, criminal, dying creatures, and who, in a few days, will become food for worms, yea, perhaps victims in the flames of hell? Is it in the palaces of the great that uprightness, good faith, and sincerity reign, yet without these society is nothing but a banditti, treaties are only snares, and laws cobwebs, which, to use a well known expression, catch only weak insects, while the free and carnivorous break through? Is it in the palaces of the great that gratitude reigns, that lawful tribute due to every motion made to procure our happiness? Is it there that the services of a faithful subject, the labors of an indefatigable merchant, the perils of an intrepid soldiery, blood shed and to be shed, are estimated and rewarded? Is it there that the cries of the wretched are heard, tears of the oppressed wiped away, the claims of truth examined and granted? Is it in the palaces of the great that benevolence reigns, that benevolence without which a man is only a wild beast? Is it there that the *young ravens which cry* are heard and fed? Psal. cxlvii. 9. Is it there that they attend to the bitter complaints of an indigent man, ready to die with hunger, and who asks for no more than will just keep him alive? Are the palaces of the great, seats of piety and devotion? Is it there that schemes are formed for the reformation of manners? Is it there that they are *grieved for the affliction of Joseph*, Amos vi. 6. and *take pleasure*

ure in the dust and stones of Zion? Psal. ciii. 14. Is it there that we hear the praises of the Creator, do they celebrate the compassion of the Redeemer of mankind?

What ideas are excited in our minds by the names of such as Caligula, Nero, Dioclesian, Decius, names detestable in all ages? What ideas could we excite in your minds, were we to weigh in a just balance the virtues of such heroes as have been rendered famous by the encomiums given them? You would be astonished to see that these men, who have been called the *delights of mankind*, have often deserved execration, and ought to be considered with horror. But I purposely forbear, and will not put in this list all that ought to be placed there, that is to say, all those who have had sovereign power, except a very few, who, in comparison, are next to none, and who are, as it were, lost in the crowd among the rest. And yet the elevation of kings makes their crimes more communicable, and their examples more contagious; their sins become a filthy vapor infecting the air, and shedding their malignant influence all over our cities and families, lightning, and thundering, and disturbing the world. Accordingly, you see in general, that what the king is in his kingdom, the governor is in his province; what the governor is in his province, the nobleman is in his domain; what the nobleman is in his domain, the master is in his family. The multitude is a bad guide, mankind are a dangerous model, considered in regard to the masters who govern them.

2. Consider the many in regard to divers *professions*. What is the profession of a soldier, particularly of an officer of rank in the army? It is to defend society, to maintain religion, to be a parent to the soldiery, to bridle the licentiousness of arms, to oppose power against injustice, to derive from all the views of death, that lie  
open

open before him, motives to prepare his accounts to produce before his judge. But what is the conduct of a soldier? Is it not to brave society? Is it not to trample upon religion? Is it not to see examples of debauchery, licentiousness, and vengeance? Is it not to let out his abilities, and to sacrifice his life to the most ambitious designs, and to the most bloody enterprizes of princes? Is it not to accustom himself to ideas of death and judgment, till he laughs at both; to stifle all remorse, and to extirpate all the fears, which such objects naturally excite in the consciences of other men?

What is the profession of a judge? It is to have no regard to the appearances of men, it is to be affable to all, who appeal to authority, to study with application the nature of a cause, which he is obliged to decide, it is patiently to go through the most fatiguing details of proofs and objections. But what is often the conduct of a judge? Is it not to be struck with the exterior difference of two parties appearing before him? Is it not to be inaccessible to the poor, to invent cruel fees, and intolerable delays? Is it not to grovel in ignorance, and to hate study and labor?

What is the profession of a man learned in the law? It is to devote his services only to truth and justice, to plead only a good cause, to assist even those, who cannot reward his labors. What is the conduct of counsel? Is it not to support both the true and the false, and to maintain by turns both justice and iniquity? Is it not to adjust his efforts to his own glory, or to his client's ability to pay?

What is the profession of a merchant? It is to detest false weights and measures, to pay his dues, and never to found his fortune on falsehood, fraud, and perjury. But what is the conduct of a merchant? Is it not to use false

weights and measures? Is it not to cheat the state of its dues? Is it not to indulge an insatiable avidity? Is it not to enrich himself by telling untruths, by practising frauds, by taking false oaths?

What is the profession of a minister? It is to devote himself wholly to truth and virtue, to set the whole church an example, to search into hospitals, and cottages, to relieve the miseries of the sick and the poor; it is to determine himself in his studies, not by what will acquire him reputation for learning and eloquence, but by what will be most useful to the people, over whom he is set; it is to regulate his choice of subjects, not by what will make himself shine, but by what will most benefit the people among whom he exercises his ministry; it is to take as much care of a dying person in an obscure family, lying on a bed of straw, lost in oblivion and silence, as of him, who, with an illustrious name, lives amidst silver and gold, and for whom the most magnificent and pompous funeral honors will be prepared; it is to cry aloud, to lift up his voice like a trumpet, and shew the people their transgressions, and the house of Israel their sins, Isa. lviii. 1. Mic. iii. 8. and 2 Cor. v. 15. *it is to know no man after the flesh when he ascends the pulpit, boldly to reprove vice, how eminent soever the seat of it may be. What is the usual conduct of a minister?—O God! Enter not into judgment with thy servants, for we cannot answer one complaint of a thousand.* Psa. cxliii. 2. Job ix. 3.

3. Consider the multitude in regard to some general maxims, which they adopt, and hold as rules and approved axioms. Have you read, in the gospel, the following maxims? Charity begins at home. Youth is a time of pleasure. It is allowable to kill time. We should not pretend to be saints. Slander is the salt of conversation.



sation, We must do as other people do. It is unworthy of a man of honor to put up an affront. A gentleman ought to avenge himself. Ambition is the vice of great souls. Provided we commit no great crimes, we sufficiently answer our calling. Impurity is an intolerable vice in a woman, but it is pardonable in a man. It would be easy to enlarge this catalogue. Which of these maxims, pray, doth not sap some of the first principles of the religion of Jesus-Christ? Yet, which of these maxims is not received in society as a fundamental rule of action, which we should be accounted singular and petulant to condemn?

4. Consider the multitude in regard to certain actions; on which they lavish praise and write encomiums! We do not mean to speak at present of such crimes as the depravity of the world sometimes celebrates under the notion of heroical actions. Our reflection is of another kind. It is pretty clear, that depravity is general, and piety in the possession of a very few, when persons of superficial knowledge are praised for the depth of their understanding, and when such as perform very small and inconsiderable actions of virtue, are considered as the wonders of the world. Sometimes I hear the world exclaim, what benevolence! What liberality! What generosity! I inquire for the evidences of these virtues, on which such lavish encomiums are bestowed; I expect to find another St. Paul, who *wisbed himself accursed for his brethren*, Rom. ix. 3. I hope to meet with another Moses, praying to be *blotted out of the book of life*, rather than see his nation perish, Exod. xxxii. 32. But no, this boasted generosity and charity is that of a man, who distributed to the poor, on one solemn occasion, once in his life, such a sum of money as he expends every day in prodigality and superfluity. It is that of a man, who bestows on all the mem-  
bers

bers of Jesus Christ, almost as much as he does on the walls of a room, or the harness of a horse. I hear the world exclaim in some circumstances, what friendship! What tenderness! I inquire for this tender, zealous, generous friend. I expect to find such an original as I have seen described in books, though I have never met with such an one in society. I hope at least to see one example of a friend, saying to a dying man, appoint me your executor, and leave me your children to bring up, and your widow to provide for. But no, I find nothing but the friendship of a man, who, by improving the fortune of another, attracts the chief advantages to himself. I hear the world exclaiming in certain circumstances, what virtue! What purity! What a mother of a family! Again I look for the object of these encomiums. I hope to see such a woman as Solomon imagined, a mother of a family, who makes her house a house of God, and her children patterns of piety. But no, I meet with a woman, who indeed does not defile the nuptial bed, who only doth not squander her income, and who teaches her children only the little course of domestic economy. All these actions are praise-worthy. All these examples ought to be imitated. But is there any ground for exclaiming, as if virtue had been carried to its highest pitch? Are these then such great efforts of religion? Alas! My brethren, commendable characters must needs be very scarce in the world, since the world is in raptures on account of these imperfect virtues; there must needs be a great dearth of wise men in the world, since there is so much boasting of one man, who takes only one step in the path of wisdom.

5. Consider mankind in regard to certain *decision occasions*, which, like touchstones, discover their hearts. We do not know ourselves, we form false ideas of ourselves, when our virtues have

have not been brought to the test. We imagine, we incline to be patient, clement and charitable, in cases where we are not tried, where neither our fortune, nor our reputation, nor our honor, are affected: but the moment a stroke is aimed at any of these, the countenance changes, the brain ferments, the mouth foams, and we breathe nothing but hatred and vengeance. Nothing is more common among us than to talk highly of justice, to detest and censure iniquity, and to engage ourselves inviolably to follow such rules of equity as are marked out in the divine law. Let any man bring an action against us, with reason or without, and all these ideas vanish, we instantly become familiar with the very vices, to which we thought we had an invincible aversion. We disguise our cause, we suppress unfavorable circumstances, we impose on our counsel, we try to take even the judges by surprise, we pretend to make great matters of the importance of our rank, the worth of our names, the credit of our families, the tone of our voices, and all this we wish to incorporate in our cause. A disinterested spirit is always the subject of our utmost admiration and praise. A generous man is the admiration of all mankind, his noble actions unite all hearts, and every man is eager to give such actions their dignity and praise: but no sooner have we a little business to do, in which we have no kind of interest, but disinterestedness appears odious to us, and magnanimity seems to us more proper for a hero of a romance than for a man living and acting in society, and generous actions appear to us mere creatures of imagination. O how little does the multitude deserve consideration in regard to manners!

IV. No more ought they to be imitated in regard to the manner, in which they *quit the world*. Here I foresee, my brethren, you will all side with one another against our doctrine, and that

we shall be obliged to blame both persons and things about dying people; such as are dying, such as surround them, such as visit them; in short, all are in disorder in the case before us. Almost every person that dies is canonized. If the light of christianity had not abolished deification, we should have filled heaven with saints and heroes and deified souls. Each house of mourning echoes with the praises of the dead, none of his looks towards heaven are forgotten, not a sigh, not an ejaculation hath escaped notice. The funeral convoys of persons the most worldly, whose hearts had been the most hardened in sin, are all uttering orations in praise of the dead. For our parts, my brethren, we, who have seen a great number of sick people, and attended many in their dying hours, we freely grant, that the salvation of many of them is probable. We have hardly seen one, whose salvation we quite despair. But how seldom have we been inclined to say, while we saw such people expire uttering the language of the most eminent saints in scripture, *Let us die the death of these righteous people, and let our last end be like theirs!* (Numb. xxiii. 10.)

I will give you a short list of general mistakes on this subject.

The first mistake is this. Most sick people are ingenious to disguise the danger of their illness. *Be not conformed to this world.* Whenever a dangerous illness attacks you, be aware of your condition, and let each say to himself, I have not long to live, at least this may be my last illness. My brethren, this supposition is never so feasible, we are in little danger of being deceived by thinking death at hand, for the numberless accidents, to which we are exposed, justify the thought — Is there any thing extravagant, pray, in affirming that sickness added to all these accidents renders the near approach of death highly probable?

The

The second mistake is this. Most dying people put off the regulation of their temporal affairs too long. *Be not conformed to this world.* You should take patterns from better models, both for reasons of affection, and reasons of prudence. True affection to a family engages a man to preclude in favor of his heirs such troubles and divisions as are the inseparable consequences of an undivided or perplexed estate. Prudence, too, will foresee, that while our minds are all occupied about temporal affairs, a thousand ideas will intrude to disturb our devotion. Do not wait till the last moment to settle your affairs, to make your will, to dispose of your family, and be not so weak as to imagine that the discharge of these necessary duties will hasten your death. Employ yourselves wholly about the state of your souls, and let each say to himself, since I have been in the world, I have hardly devoted one whole day to devotion: since I have been a member of the church, I have been exercised about affairs which interest the whole society: but now that I am come to the end of my life, now I am passing out of this world, now that I am going where I shall have no more portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun, disturb me no more, ye worldly ideas; thou fashion of this world passing away, appear no more in my sight: ye wild fowls, interrupt my sacrifice no more.

The third mistake is this. Most dying people delay sending for their ministers till the last moment. They would have us do violence to the laws of nature, they set us to exhort trunks, to instruct carcasses, to prepare skin and bones for eternity. *Be not conformed to this world.* Why should ye delay? Is there any thing odious in our ministry? We do not bring death along with us, we do not hasten its approach; if we denounce the judgments of God against you, it is not with a design to terrify you, but to free you

you from them, and to *pull you out of the fire*, Jude 23.

To these I add a fourth mistake. Most dying people think it a duty to tell their pastors of excellent sentiments, which indeed they have not, and they are afraid to discover their defects. When death makes his formidable appearance before them, they think religion requires them to say, they are quite willing to die. *We desire, say they, to depart*; when, alas! all their desires are to *make a tabernacle in the world, for it is good, they think, to be there*. They tremble at the coming of Christ, and yet they cry, *Come, Lord Jesus, come quickly*. Ah! *Be not conformed to this world*, open thy heart that it may be known, discover the maladies of thy soul, that we may apply such remedies as are proper. Do not imagine you will acquire such sentiments and emotions as saints of the first order had by talking their language: but imbibe their principles in your mind, and their tempers in your heart, before you make use of their language.

The fifth mistake is this. Most dying people speak to their ministers only in the presence of a great number of attendants, and most attendants interfere in what ministers say on those occasions. *Be not conformed to this world*. Two reasons may convince you of the necessity of being alone. The first regards the pastor. Surrounding attendants divert his attention from the sick person. The second regards the sick person himself. Would it be just or kind to give him directions in public? What! would you have us, in the presence of a husband, lay open the intrigues of an immodest wife, and endeavor to bring her to repent of her lasciviousness by convicting her of her crimes? Would you have us reprove the head of a family for the iniquity that has disgraced his long life, in the presence of his son? Would you have us exhort a dying man

to make restitution of his ill-gotten wealth, in the presence of an hungry heir, who already gluts his eyes, and satiates his soul with hopes of succession? Were we casuists after the Roman fashion, did we compel consciences to reveal secrets to us, which ought to be confessed to God alone, did we interfere with your families and properties, there would be some ground for your scruples: but while we desire nothing but to exonerate your consciences, and to awaken your souls to a sense of danger, before you be plunged into an abyss of eternal misery, respect our conduct, and condescend to submit to our instruction.

To these I add one mistake more. Most dying people trust too much to their ministers, and take too little pains themselves to form such dispositions as a dying bed requires. *Be not conformed to this world.* It is not enough to have external help to die well, we ourselves must concur in this great work, we must, by profound meditation, by frequent reflections, and by fervent prayers, support ourselves under this last attack, and thus put the last hand to the work of our salvation. It is true, the infirmities of your bodies will affect your minds, and will often interrupt your religious exercises; but no matter, God doth not require of a dying person connected meditations, accurate reflections, precise and formal prayers, for one sigh, one tear, one ejaculation of your soul to God, one serious wish rising from the bottom of your heart will be highly esteemed by the Lord, and will draw down new favors upon you.

To conclude. The multitude is a bad guide in regard to faith, in regard to manners, and in regard to departing out of this life. A man who desires to be saved, should be always upon his guard, lest he should be rolled down the torrent: he ought to compile in his closet, or rather in his conscience, a religion apart, such as is, not that  
of

of the children of the world, but that of the disciples of wisdom. *Be not conformed to this world.*

I finish with two reflections. I address the first to those, who derive from this discourse no consequences to direct their actions: and the second to such as refer it to its true design.

First. I address myself to you who do not draw any consequences from this discourse to regulate your actions. You have seen a portrait of the multitude. I suppose you acknowledge the likeness, and acquiesce in the judgment we have made. It seems, too many proofs and demonstrations establish this proposition, the multitude is a bad guide. Now you may follow which example you please. You may make your choice between the maxims of Jesus Christ and the maxims of the world. But we have a right to require one thing of you, which you cannot refuse us without injustice, that is, that granting the genius of the multitude, when you are told you are destroying yourselves, you do not pretend to have refuted us by replying, we conduct ourselves as the world does, and every body does what you condemn in us. Thanks be to God, your proposition is not strictly true! Thanks be to God, the rule hath some exceptions! There are many regenerate souls, hidden perhaps from the eyes of men, but visible to God. There are even some saints, who shine in the sight of the whole world, and who, to use the expression of Jesus Christ, are a *city set on a hill*, Matt. v. 14. What then, you never cast your eyes on the most illustrious objects in this world! Do you reckon for nothing what alone merits observation in society, and what constitutes the true glory of it? Have you no value for men, for whose sake the world subsists, and society is preserved?

However, your proposition is indisputable in a general



General sense, and we are obliged to allow it, for our whole discourse tends to elucidate and establish the point. Alledge this proposition, but do not alledge it for the purpose of opposing the censures you have heard, or of getting rid of our reproofs. By answering in this manner, you give us an advantage over you, you lay a foundation which you mean to destroy, you do not furnish yourselves with a shield against your ministers, but you yourselves supply them with arms to wound and destroy you. Why do we declaim against your conduct? What do we mean when we reprove your way of living, except to convince you that it is not answerable to the christian character which you bear? What do we mean, except that you break the vows made for you in your baptism, and which you yourselves have often ratified at the Lord's table? What, in one word, except that you do not obey the laws of the gospel? But what can you advance more proper to strengthen the testimony, which we bear against you, than that which you advance to weaken it, that is, that you live as the world lives.

All the world, say you, conduct themselves as we do, and every body does what you censure us for doing. But all the world conduct themselves badly, all the world violate the spirit of religion, all the world attack the maxims of Jesus Christ, all the world run in the broad road of perdition, all the world are destroying themselves, and the apostle exhorts us not to take the world for an example.

Secondly. I address myself to you, who sincerely desire to apply this discourse to its true design. I grant, the road opened to you is difficult. To resist the torrent, to brave the multitude, to see one's self like Elijah *alone* on the Lord's side, and, in this general apostacy, in which a christian so often finds himself, when he desires

desires to sacrifice all to his duty, to recollect motives of attachment to it, this is one of the noblest efforts of christian heroism.

However, after all, it would argue great puerility, to magnify our ideas of the crowd, the many, the multitude; it would be childish to be too much struck with these ideas, every body thinks, in this manner, all the world acts thus. I affirm, that truth and virtue, have more partisans than error and vice, and God hath more disciples than Satan. What do you call the crowd, the many, the multitude? What do you mean by all the world? What? You and your companions, your family, your acquaintances, your fellow-citizens, the inhabitants of this globe, to which the Creator hath confined you; is this what you call all the world? What littleness of ideas! Cast your eyes on that little mole hill, occupied, by a few thousands of ants, lend them intelligence, propose to one of these insects other maxims than those of his fellows, exhort him to have a little more ambition, than to occupy a tiny imperceptible space upon that mole hill; animate him to form projects more noble than that of collecting a few grains of corn, and then put into the mouth of this little emmet the same pretext that you make use of to us; I shall be alone, all the world conduct themselves in another manner. Would you not pity this insect? Would not he appear more contemptible to you for his mean and spiritless ideas, than for the diminitiveness of his body? Would you not look with disdain on an ant, that had no other ambition than that of taking for a model, other insects about him, and preferring their approbation before that of mankind, who hold a rank so high in the scale of the world? My brethren, give what colors you will to this imagination, it is however certain, that you would form unjust ideas of this insect. An emmet hath no relation to those

those beings, which you propose to him for models. Such ideas of happiness as you trace to him have no proportion to his faculties. Is an emmet capable of science, to be allured by the company of the learned? Can an ant form plans of sieges and battles, or render himself sensible of that glory, which exploits of war acquire, and for which the heroes of the world sacrifice their repose and their lives?

It is you, who have that meanness of soul, which you just now puffed in an ant. You inhabit cities and provinces, which, compared with the rest of the world, resemble the size of mole hills; the whole globe itself is nothing in comparison of the immense spaces, in which other works of the Creator are lodged. You creep on earth with a handful of men much less in comparison with the thousand thousands of other intelligences than an ant hill is in comparison of mankind. You have intimate relations to these intelligences; you, like them, are capable of great and noble functions; like them, you are capable of knowledge; like them, you are able to know the Supreme Being; you can love like them; you can form tender and delicate connections as they can; and like them, you are destined to eternal duration and felicity.

Do not say then, I shall be alone, nobody lives as you would have me live. They are the men, who surround you, that are *nobody* in comparison of the intelligences, whom I propose to you for examples. It ill suits insignificant men to consider themselves alone as in the centre of divine benevolence, and as the only subjects of a monarch, who reigneth over all existence. *He sitteth upon the circle of the earth, whence the inhabitants appear to him as grasshoppers. He bringeth princes to nothing, he considereth the judges of the earth as vanity. He shall blow upon them and they shall wither, and the whirl-*

wind shall take them away like stubble, *Iud. xli. 22.*

But ye, celestial intelligences, seraphims burning with love, angels mighty in strength, messengers of the divine will, spirits rapid as the wind, and penetrating as fire, ye redeemed of all nations, all kindred, all people, all tongues, *Rev. vii. 9.* ye make the crowd, ye fill the court of the sovereign of the world; and, when we refuse to conform ourselves to this world, we imitate you; and when the slaves of the world shall be loaded with chains of darkness, we shall share with you the riper of pleasures, at the right hand of that God, whom you serve, and to whose service we, like you, devote ourselves. God grant us this grace! To him be honor and glory for ever.



